Oxides, oxides, and more oxides: high-κ oxides, ferroelectrics, ferromagnetics, and multiferroics

N. Izyumskaya, Ya. Alivov¹, and H. Morkoç

School of Engineering
Electrical and Computer Engineering Department
Virginia Commonwealth University
Richmond VA 23284-3068
¹ Present address: University of California, Irvine, Department of Radiological Sciences
School of Medicine, Medical Sciences I, B-140, Irvine, CA 92697-5000

We review and critique the recent developments on multifunctional oxide materials which are gaining a good deal of interest. Recognizing that this is a vast area, the focus of this treatment is mainly on high-κ dielectric, ferroelectric, magnetic, and multiferroic materials. Also, we consider ferrimagnetic oxides in the context of the new, rapidly developing field of negative-index metamaterials. This review is motivated by the recent resurgence of interest in complex oxides owing to their coupling of electrical, magnetic, thermal, mechanical, and optical properties, which make them suitable for a wide variety of applications, including heat, motion, electric, and magnetic sensors; tunable and compact microwave passive components; surface acoustic wave devices; non-linear optics; non-volatile memory; and pave the way for designing multifunctional devices and unique applications in spintronics and negative refraction-index media. For most of the materials treated here, structural and physical properties, preparation methods accompanied by particulars of synthesis of thin films, devices based on them, and some projections into their future applications are discussed.

Contents
1 Introduction................................................................................................................. 4
2 High-κ dielectrics........................................................................................................ 18
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Section</th>
<th>Title</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>4.2.4</td>
<td>Growth of manganite thin films</td>
<td>103</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4.3</td>
<td>Device applications of mixed-valence manganites</td>
<td>122</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>Multiferroics</td>
<td>128</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.1</td>
<td>Brief history and basic properties of multiferroic materials</td>
<td>128</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.2</td>
<td>Bi-based perovskite oxides</td>
<td>134</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.2.1</td>
<td>BiFeO$_3$</td>
<td>134</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.2.2</td>
<td>BiMnO$_3$</td>
<td>144</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.2.3</td>
<td>BiCrO$_3$</td>
<td>147</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.2.4</td>
<td>Bi$_2$FeCrO$_6$</td>
<td>150</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.3</td>
<td>Yttrium and rare-earth manganites RMnO$_3$</td>
<td>152</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.3.1</td>
<td>YMnO$_3$</td>
<td>155</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.4</td>
<td>RMn$_2$O$_5$</td>
<td>158</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.5</td>
<td>Two-phase multiferroics</td>
<td>166</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6</td>
<td>Metamaterials</td>
<td>169</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>Concluding remarks</td>
<td>185</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
1 Introduction

Oxides comprise a wide class of materials exhibiting rich crystal structures and physical properties which make them ideal candidates for a plethora of applications. There has been a recent resurgence of interest in oxides in general and complex oxides in particular owing to their piezoelectric, ferroelectric, ferromagnetic, ferrimagnetic, and multiferroic properties as well as in many cases owing to large dielectric constants (imperative for scaled Si metal-oxide-semiconductor field effect transistors (MOSFET)). While these properties had been recognized many decades ago, the renewed interest stems from exploiting improved deposition techniques, which would potentially allow not only higher quality material but also thin films and heterstructures with new functionalities as well as composite structures with e.g. magnetoelectric coupling, a concept which has gotten a good deal of attention recently.

Oxide materials with large dielectric constants (so-called “high-κ dielectrics”) have attracted much attention due to their potential use as gate dielectrics in MOSFETs. In the modern Si-based CMOS technology, scaling to smaller device dimensions for higher packing density, faster circuit speed, and lower power dissipation per gate requires the gate oxide thickness to be made smaller as the channel length is made shorter. When the channel length becomes of the same order of magnitude as the depletion-layer widths of the source and drain, a MOSFET device is considered to be short and the so-called short-channel effects arise. To help to cope with the short channel effects, thickness of the gate oxide must be reduced. This causes a reduction in the on/off current ratios. Moreover, the reduction of oxide thicknesses results in increased gate leakage current, which is a formidable problem particularly for
large density circuits. Already, the thickness required for the venerable SiO$_2$ gate dielectric is comparable to tunneling distance which would cause intolerable levels of gate leakage. Consequently, high-κ dielectric materials having higher dielectric constants, which allow scaling with much larger thicknesses, are actively investigated. The benefits of high-κ dielectrics can be clearly understood from Equation 1, which represents an equivalent oxide thickness (EOT) $t_{\text{eq}}$, a quantity used to compare performance of high-κ dielectric MOS gates with performance of SiO$_2$-based MOS gates. EOT is the thickness of SiO$_2$ gate oxide needed to obtain the same gate capacitance as that obtained with thicker high-κ dielectrics.

$$t_{\text{eq}} = t_{\text{SiO}_2} \frac{\varepsilon_{\text{high-κ}}}{\varepsilon_{\text{SiO}_2}} = t_{\text{SiO}_2} \frac{\varepsilon_{\text{high-κ}}}{3.9},$$  

Equation 1

where, $\varepsilon_{\text{high-κ}}$ and $\varepsilon_{\text{SiO}_2}$ are dielectric constants of high-κ dielectrics and SiO$_2$, respectively ($\varepsilon_{\text{SiO}_2} = 3.9$). For example, a 1-nm-thick SiO$_2$ gate dielectric (referred to as the equivalent thickness) can be replaced with a 10 nm thick high-κ dielectric with a relative dielectric constant of 39. Thus, for a certain gate capacitance, the thickness of high-κ gate oxide can be increased by a factor of $(\varepsilon_{\text{high-κ}}/\varepsilon_{\text{SiO}_2})$ as compared to that made of SiO$_2$. Therefore, the search is on for high-κ dielectrics that are compatible with Si and its
processing and allow retention of the gate oxide capacitance needed for reducing short channel effects, while still using sufficiently thick oxide layers to prevent current conduction through it.

Despite the fact that many dielectrics have a much higher dielectric constant (20-100), finding a material to replace SiO₂ is a formidable challenge, because of such issues as requisite high channel/dielectric interface quality, reliability, and low leakage current. To reiterate, the main criteria for a gate dielectric include band offsets that block hot charge carriers, provides chemical stability in contact with both the silicon substrate and the gate material, and low density of interface and bulk states. Attempts to introduce high-κ dielectrics into the CMOS technology began as early as in 70-80s, but was delayed because of their high defect concentrations, particularly what was perceived to be O vacancies, which resulted in charge trapping, transient threshold voltage shifts, and degradation of Si carrier mobility due to Coulombic scattering.

Different aspects of high κ dielectrics have been the subject of several excellent review papers. For example, de Almeida and Baumvol analyzed in details the reaction and diffusive properties of dielectric/gate and dielectric/channel interfaces. Wilk et al. reviewed the status of the of the high-κ dielectric studies, vista 2000, which was followed by a similar review by Wallace and Wilk, vista 2003, with some updates, and a very recent review by Schlom et al., vista 2008. Zhu et al. provided an overview of high-resolution electron-, ion-, and photon-based techniques currently used to characterize microstructure of high-κ gate dielectrics and interfaces between high-κ dielectrics and metal gates. Since this area of research represents a large fraction of the activity in oxide
materials a succinct review of the subject matter is provided here. In concert with the stated objectives, we review only briefly the very recent progress in the field of high-κ dielectrics, while a more thorough discussion can be found in a review by Wu et al. 7

Considering the broad area of oxides and their applications beyond gate dielectrics, ferroelectric and ferromagnetic oxides belong to a class of materials that exhibit spontaneous electric polarization for the former and magnetic polarization for the latter below a temperature called the Curie temperature, $T_C$. Both ferroelectrics and ferromagnetics show saturation and hysteresis in their polarization/magnetization characteristics vs. electric/magnetic field. Ferroelectrics take their name because of the similarity of their electric field dependence of electric polarization to the magnetic field dependence of magnetic polarization in ferromagnetic materials, although Fe is not involved at all. Magnetic oxides typically contain transition metals, such as Mn, Fe, etc., or a rare earth, such as Gd, etc., which forms the basis for magnetic polarization. Somewhat similarly, ferroelectric materials have an ion, such as Ti, Ta, Zr, etc., which is responsible for electric polarization. Low symmetry of a crystal, in particular non-centrosymmetric feature, is essential for the occurrence of ferroelectricity. All ferroelectric materials also exhibit piezoelectricity (ability to generate an electric potential in response to applied mechanical stress) and pyroelectricity (ability to create electric charge in response to temperature change), but the opposite does not hold.

Ferroelectric oxides are of great interest for a wide range of applications such as pyroelectric and piezoelectric sensors, capacitors, surface acoustic wave (SAW) devices, and micro-electromechanical systems (MEMS). The increased interest in these materials lately stems in part from the fact they are considered to be good candidates for non-volatile ferroelectric random-access
memory (FeRAM) devices, due to their high dielectric constant values and hysteresis in their polarization vs. electric field characteristics. Ferroelectrics are characterized by spontaneous polarization, the direction of which can be changed by external electric field. These two states of spontaneous polarization are used as the logic states of a memory device which does not require power backup to maintain the stored information. Thus, thin films of ferroelectric oxides can be exploited in semiconductor devices to achieve FeRAM with long endurance and high-speed access, which can overcome the barriers encountered in current semiconductor memory technologies, provided that leakage current is very low. In fact, low density embedded ferroelectric memories are being considered for implementation in commercial devices, such as cellular phones and smart cards. Various perovskite-structure oxides, including strontium bismuth tantalate SrBi₂Ta₂O₉ (SBT), barium strontium titanate BaₓSr₁₋ₓTiO₃ (BST), La-substituted bismuth titanate Bi₄₋ₓLaₓTi₃O₁₂ (BLT), and lead zirconate titanate PbZr₁₋ₓTiₓO₃ (PZT) have been considered as candidates for ferroelectric memory devices. Among these materials, however, only two – SBT and PZT – have been seriously attempted for penetration into the FeRAM industry.

Piezoelectric thin films have also been integrated into MEMS devices such as micro-scale accelerometers, displacement transducers, and actuators. Moreover, pyroelectric properties of thin films are used in high sensitivity IR detectors. Progress has also occurred in the application of high-dielectric-constant thin films and electro-optic thin films in the areas of high frequency devices and optical switches, respectively, for integrated optical systems. However, the relative degree of activities in those fields has not been as
large as those in the case of ferroelectric applications. In addition, ferroelectric oxides are found to be very stable to high-energy radiation, a feature which is important for space applications.\textsuperscript{8,9}

Magnetic oxides have been exploited for many centuries. The first recognized permanent magnetic material was lodestone (naturally occurring Fe\textsubscript{3}O\textsubscript{4} oxide – magnetite). Since the 1930s, ferrites, insulating ferrimagnetic oxides with a general composition MeO·Fe\textsubscript{2}O\textsubscript{3} (Me = divalent metal ion), have been extensively studied for their magnetic and electronic properties.\textsuperscript{10} Ferrites find a plethora of applications in passive microwave components such as isolators, circulators, phase shifters, delay lines, switches, attenuators, and miniature antennas operating over a wide range of frequencies and as magnetic recording media, to cite a few.\textsuperscript{11} The interest in magnetic oxides has exponentially grown, stimulated by the discovery of high-temperature superconductivity in cuprates\textsuperscript{12,13,14,15} (which are beyond the scope of this review) and the more recent discovery of the colossal-magnetoresistance (CMR) effect in mixed-valence manganese oxides of the general formula Re\textsubscript{1-x}A\textsubscript{x}MnO\textsubscript{3} (where Re = rare earth, A = alkaline earth).\textsuperscript{16,17} The unusual magnetoresistance behaviour of these oxides results from a unique type of a metal–insulator transition. Depending on the composition, doping, and growth conditions (temperature, pressure) the manganites exhibit a broad range of electronic and magnetic phases, ranging from low-resistance ferromagnetic metals to high-resistance insulators. Due to high spin polarization, the manganites show a great potential for applications in magnetic tunnel junctions (MTJs), which are promising candidates for non-volatile magnetic random access memory (MRAM).\textsuperscript{18}
Besides the mixed-valence manganese oxides, diluted magnetic oxides (DMOs) have attracted considerable attention as promising materials for potential spintronic applications. Spintronics, coined from spin electronics, is an emerging technology intended for use of spin of carriers along with their charge. As compared to conventional electronic devices, spintronic devices are expected to offer some advantages, including nonvolatility, lower power consumption, higher speed of data processing, and higher packing density. At the present time, the only commercial spintronic device is MRAM exploiting MTJs made from ferromagnetic metals. Although commercial metal-based MRAM has become available recently, efforts toward semiconductor-based spintronics are motivated by the possibility to incorporate devices for information processing and non-volatile storage in a single chip.\textsuperscript{19} Besides, spin injection across a semiconductor/metal interface can be adversely affected by the presence of defects at the interface, which results in low injection efficiency.\textsuperscript{20} Highly efficient electrical injection of spin polarized carriers into a semiconductor active region is one of the prerequisites for realizing semiconductor-based spintronic devices such as the spin FETs, spin light-emitting diodes (LED), spin resonant tunneling device, \textit{etc}. The spin injection may also be useful for magnetic memories, in which the magnetization reversal of bit cells could be triggered by the interaction between injected spin-polarized carriers and localized spins\textsuperscript{21} and for semiconductor lasers that would have better mode stability and lower threshold currents. DMOs belong to a wider class of diluted magnetic semiconductors (DMSs) which are semiconducting materials in which a fraction of the host cations is substitutionally replaced by magnetic ions (transition metals (TM) with partially filled $d$ states or rare-earth elements with partially filled $f$ states). For practical applications in spintronic devices, a material obviously should be ferromagnetic above room temperature. Theoretical predictions that
TM-doped GaN and ZnO could have the Curie point above room temperature\textsuperscript{22,23} and experimental findings of ferromagnetism in TM-doped TiO\textsubscript{2} \textsuperscript{24} set off a flurry of extensive research, both experimental and theoretical, into TM-doped DMOs as potential materials for spintronic devices. Up to now, room-temperature ferromagnetism has been reported, with some controversy, in various oxides, including ZnO, TiO\textsubscript{2}, SnO\textsubscript{2}, In\textsubscript{2}O\textsubscript{3}, (In,Sn)\textsubscript{2}O\textsubscript{3} (ITO), CeO\textsubscript{2}.

One more class of oxide materials showing great promise for spintronic applications is the so-called multiferroics.\textsuperscript{25} By definition, a ferroic material possesses one of the ferroic properties: ferromagnetism, ferroelectricity, or ferroelasticity, while a multiferroic material exhibits two or three of the ferroic properties in the same phase.\textsuperscript{26}

Figure 1 shows the well-known triangle used to describe the pathways between external forces, such as stress (\(\sigma\)) and electric (E) and magnetic (H) fields, and associated material properties, such as strain (\(\varepsilon\)), electrical polarization (P), and magnetization (M). A ferroelastic, ferroelectric, or magnetic ferroic material exhibits spontaneous strain, polarization, or magnetization which can be switched hysteretically by applied stress, electric field, or magnetic field, respectively (shown by solid arrows). In multiferroics, additional interactions also arise (dashed arrows). For example, in multiferroics which are simultaneously ferromagnetic and ferroelectric, a coupling between these two orders (magnetoelastic coupling) may arise. In these materials, called “magnetoelastic multiferroics”, electric polarization can be induced by an external magnetic field, and \textit{vice versa} meaning magnetization can be induced by an external electric field. It should be noted that not all ferromagnetic/ferroelectric multiferroics exhibit magnetoelastic coupling.\textsuperscript{27} Figure 2 illustrates a relationship between multiferroic and magnetoelastic oxides. On the other hand, magnetoelastic
coupling may occur not only in a material with ferromagnetic and ferroelectric order, but also in any magnetically and electrically polarizable material, including ferri-, antiferro-, and paramagnets and antiferro- and paraelectrics.²⁷

**Figure 1** Diagram illustrating the interrelation between external forces (electric field $E$, magnetic field $H$, and stress $\sigma$) and material properties (electric polarization $P$, magnetization $M$, and strain $\varepsilon$). Also shown are coupling coefficients between the material properties and external forces, e.g. electric susceptibility ($\chi_E$), magnetic susceptibility ($\chi_M$), and compliance tensor ($S$).
Figure 2 Diagram illustrating a relationship between multiferroic and magnetoelectric oxides. Large ovals represent magnetically polarized (MP) and electrically polarizable (EP) materials. The magnetically (electrically) polarizable materials include ferro-, ferri-, antiferro-, and paramagnets (ferro-, antiferro-, and paraelectrics). Large circles represent ferromagnetic (FM) and ferroelectric (FE) materials. Intersection of the large circle (shadowed area) represents multiferroic materials (MF). Small grey circle represents oxides exhibiting magnetoelectric coupling (ME), an independent phenomenon that can, but needs not, take place in a material which is both magnetically and electrically polarizable. After Ref. 27.

The magnetoelectric effect is generally described using the Landau theory by writing the expansion of free energy $F$ of the system in S.I. units as$^{27,28}$
\[
F(E, H) = F_0 - P_i^S E_i - \mu_o M_i^S H_i - \frac{1}{2} \varepsilon_o \varepsilon_j E_i E_j - \frac{1}{2} \mu_o \mu_j H_i H_j
- \alpha_{ij} E_i H_j - \frac{1}{2} \beta_{ijk} E_i H_j H_k - \frac{1}{2} \gamma_{ijk} H_i E_j E_k - ...
\]

Equation 2

where \( F_0 \) is the field independent energy, \( P_i^S \) and \( M_i^S \) are the spontaneous polarization and magnetization, respectively, and \( \varepsilon_j \) and \( \mu_j \) are the second ranked permittivity and permeability tensors, respectively. The term with the second ranked tensor \( \alpha_{ij} \) describes the linear magnetoelectric coupling and the terms with the third ranked tensors \( \beta_{ijk} \) and \( \gamma_{ijk} \) represent the higher-order magnetoelectric effects. The polarization and the magnetization of the system may then be obtained by differentiation of Equation 2 with respect to \( E_i \) and \( H_i \), respectively:

\[
P_i(E, H) = -\frac{\partial F(E, H)}{\partial E_i} \bigg|_{E_i=0} = P_i^S + \alpha_j H_j + \frac{1}{2} \beta_{ijk} H_j H_k + ...
\]

\[
\mu_0 M_i(E, H) = -\frac{\partial F(E, H)}{\partial H_i} \bigg|_{H_i=0} = \mu_0 M_i^S + \alpha_j E_j + \frac{1}{2} \gamma_{ijk} E_j E_k + ...
\]

Equation 3
By ignoring the higher order terms in Equation 2, the magnetoelectric response can be shown to be limited by the geometric mean of the diagonalized permittivity and permeability tensors

\[ \alpha_{ij}^2 \leq \mu_0 \epsilon_0 \mu_j \epsilon_j \]

Equation 4

The tendency toward device miniaturization provides the motivation for exploring multifunctional materials, i.e. materials that can perform more than one task or that can be manipulated by several independent stimuli. Two types of multiferroic materials have already found practical use: ferroelastic ferroelectrics exhibiting both spontaneous switchable strain and polarization are widely used in piezoelectric transducers, and ferromagnetic ferroelastics exhibiting coupling between magnetization and strain are used in magnetomechanical actuators. Magnetoelastic multiferroics, combining ferroelectric and magnetic properties, also show considerable promise for applications in multifunctional devices, such as electric-field-controlled ferromagnetic resonance devices, transducers with magnetically modulated piezoelectricity, and multiple-state memory elements. The magnetoelectric coupling between magnetic and electrical orders in these multiferroics adds a new functionality: a possibility to control magnetic polarization by applying electric field and vice versa. This paves the way to fabrication of new type of memory devices, such as electric-field-controlled magnetic random access memory (MERAM), wherein data can be written electrically and read magnetically. The use of
electric field instead of magnetic one in the writing procedure will allow drastic reduction in power consumption, increase in speed, and miniaturization of memory devices.

Unfortunately, magnetoelectric multiferroics are rare (and those exhibiting magnetoelectric effect at room temperature are extremely rare) and almost all of them are antiferromagnets or weak ferromagnets. Besides, the magnetoelectric coefficient \( \alpha_{ij} \) is usually small, since single-phase multiferroics often exhibit only weak magnetization and/or ferroelectricity. The magnetoelectric coupling may arise, however, not only directly between the two order parameters in one phase, but also indirectly via mechanical strain between two separate phases, namely ferroelectric and ferro/ferrimagnetic, combined into a multiferroic composite structure. This approach allows one to choose ferroelectric and magnetic materials with required parameters independently and to fabricate multiferroic composites with magnetoelectric response several orders of magnitude larger than that in single-phase multiferroics. These multiferroic composites have great potential for applications in multifunctional devices, such as magnetoelectric transducers, actuators, sensors, and heterogeneous read/write devices.

Another interesting and rapidly developing class of composite materials is the so-called negative-index (NI) metamaterials. NI metamaterials are artificial periodic structures exhibiting negative permittivity and permeability in the same frequency range, which gives rise to a negative index of refraction, a phenomenon that never occurs in natural materials. The unique properties of NI materials open possibilities for a plethora of potential applications, ranging from antennas, spectrally selective filters, subwavelength waveguides, and beam steerers, to superlenses with resolution exceeding the diffraction limit, and invisibility
Generally, metamaterial structures are built up from two sets of resonators (usually an array of metal rods interspersed with an array of split ring resonators) which provide separately negative permittivity and permeability. However, such structures are inconvenient for practical use: due to their resonant nature they work in a narrow frequency range, they are not tunable, and it is difficult to scale these structures to infrared and optical frequency range. This has stimulated the search for metamaterials composed partially of natural materials and drawn attention to ferrites, magnetic oxides which can provide negative permeability. NI metamaterials consisting of ferrites responsible for negative permeability and an array of conducting wires responsible for negative permittivity have been recently proposed. Such structures are easier to fabricate, and they are tunable by applying magnetic field.

In this paper, we review the progress made in oxides with an emphasis on high-κ dielectric, ferroelectric, ferromagnetic, and multiferroic materials. Some attention is also paid to ferrite-based NI metamaterials. The paper is organized as follows. Section 2 is devoted to high-κ dielectric oxides. Brief history and basic properties of ferroelectrics as well as their application and thin film growth methods are introduced in Section 3. Section 4 deals with magnetic oxides, including diluted magnetic oxides and mixed-valence manganites, which is followed by a discussion of multiferroic oxides in Section 5. The role played by oxide materials in the development of negative-index composites are discussed in Section 6. And finally, Section 7 highlights some important issues that need to be addressed in the future.
2 High-κ dielectrics

With increasing demand for higher speed and device density, the device dimensions in Si CMOS-based integration circuits are continually being scaled down, following what is termed as the Moore’s law. The integrated circuit fabrication based on MOSFET relies on amorphous thermally grown SiO₂ as a gate dielectric. In addition to superb electrical insulation and interfacial bonding properties, the Si/SiO₂ system offers several important advantages including a stable thermodynamic Si/SiO₂ interface, defect charge density associated with the Si/SiO₂ interface of the order of \(10^{10}/\text{cm}^2\), mid-gap interface state density of about \(10^{10}/\text{cm}^2\text{eV}\) or less, and hard breakdown fields in excess of 10 MV/cm. These outstanding properties clearly present a significant challenge for any alternative gate dielectric candidate. However, the reduction of gate dimensions, the cornerstone of which is the reduction of the gate and the channel length, requires that the oxide thickness be reduced in order to prevent the short channel effects or render them manageable. Thus, with scaling down of feature sizes, the thickness of the SiO₂ dielectric layer must be reduced to the point that tunneling induced leakage current becomes unacceptably large. This calls for alternative dielectrics with much higher dielectric constants. At the very minimum, in addition to compatibility with CMOS processing, the high-κ dielectric proposed to replace SiO₂ must have large band discontinuity for both the conduction and valence bands of Si (which means a large bandgap), low interface and bulk trap density, and low leakage current. There are a number of high-κ dielectrics which have been and/or are actively being pursued for replacing SiO₂. Among them are gadolinium oxide Gd₂O₃, magnesium oxide MgO, erbium oxide Er₂O₃, neodymium oxide Nd₂O₃.
praseodymium oxide Pr$_2$O$_3$,$^{54}$ cerium oxide CeO$_2$,$^{55,56,57,58,59}$ cerium zirconate CeZrO$_4$,$^{60}$ aluminum oxide Al$_2$O$_3$, lanthanum aluminum oxide LaAlO$_3$,$^{54,61,62}$ lanthanum oxide La$_2$O$_3$,$^{61,63}$ yttrium oxide Y$_2$O$_3$,$^{61}$ tantalum pentoxide Ta$_2$O$_5$,$^{54,64,65,66}$ titanium dioxide TiO$_2$,$^{67}$ zirconium dioxide ZrO$_2$$^{68,69,70}$, zirconium silicate ZrSiO$_4$$^{71}$, hafnium oxide HfO$_2$,$^{55,72,73}$ HfO$_2$–based oxides HfSiO$_2$,$^{74}$ HfDyO$_x$,$^{75}$ HfScO$_x$,$^{75}$ hafnium silicate HfSi$_x$O$_y$,$^{76}$ dysprosium oxide Dy$_2$O$_3$,$^{77,78}$ strontium titanate SrTiO$_3$,$^{79}$ LaLuO$_3$,$^{80,81}$ and rare-earth scandates LaScO$_3$, GdScO$_3$, DyScO$_3$, and SmScO$_3$.$^{62,82,83,84,85,86}$ Among this variety, HfO$_2$ and HfO$_2$–based materials as well as LaLuO$_3$ and rare-earth scandates LaScO$_3$, GdScO$_3$, DyScO$_3$, and SmScO$_3$ are considered as the most promising candidates combining high dielectric permittivity and thermal stability with low leakage current due to a reasonably high barrier height that limits electron tunneling.$^6$ A list of high-κ dielectric oxides and their physical properties, such as dielectric constant, band gap, conduction band offsets relative to Si and Ge, and crystal structures is given in Table I.$^{49,50,51,52,54,55,58,61,80,87,88,89,90,91,92,93,94,95,96}$ Figure 3 presents graphical representation of the band alignments between Si and various high-κ dielectrics.
Table 1
Some physical parameters of high-κ dielectrics and heterostructures with Si and Ge.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Material</th>
<th>Dielectric constant (k)</th>
<th>Band gap $E_G$ (eV)</th>
<th>Band offset $\Delta E_C$ (eV) to Si</th>
<th>Band offset $\Delta E_C$ (eV) to Ge</th>
<th>Crystal structure</th>
<th>Refs.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>SiO$_2$</td>
<td>3.9</td>
<td>8.9</td>
<td>3.2</td>
<td>3.2</td>
<td>Amorphous</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Si$_3$N$_4$</td>
<td>5.3</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>1.7</td>
<td>1.9</td>
<td>Amorphous</td>
<td>2,87</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Al$_2$O$_3$</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>8.7</td>
<td>2.6</td>
<td>2.8</td>
<td>Amorphous</td>
<td>2,87</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TiO$_2$</td>
<td>4-86</td>
<td>3.0</td>
<td>3.2</td>
<td>3.5</td>
<td>Tetragonal (rutile)</td>
<td>67</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Tetragonal (anatase)</td>
<td>67</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Amorphous</td>
<td>67</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MgO</td>
<td>9.8</td>
<td>7.3</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Cubic</td>
<td>50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HfO$_2$</td>
<td>~25</td>
<td>5.7</td>
<td>1.5</td>
<td>2.0±0.1</td>
<td>Monoclinic, tetragonal, cubic</td>
<td>2,88</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HfSiO$_4$</td>
<td>13-20</td>
<td>6.5</td>
<td>2.03</td>
<td>2.2</td>
<td>Amorphous</td>
<td>50,87</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ZrO$_2$</td>
<td>~25</td>
<td>5.8</td>
<td>1.4</td>
<td>1.63</td>
<td>Monoclinic, tetragonal, cubic</td>
<td>69,87</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ta$_2$O$_5$</td>
<td>26-25</td>
<td>~5</td>
<td>0.3</td>
<td>0.8</td>
<td>Orthorhombic</td>
<td>2,64,87</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>25</td>
<td>4.2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Amorphous</td>
<td>54,66</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CeO$_2$</td>
<td>52</td>
<td>3.3</td>
<td>0.75</td>
<td></td>
<td>Cubic</td>
<td>56,91,96</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Er$_2$O$_3$</td>
<td>14.4</td>
<td>7.5</td>
<td>~3.5</td>
<td></td>
<td>Cubic</td>
<td>51</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nd$_2$O$_3$</td>
<td>12.64</td>
<td>5.8</td>
<td>2.2</td>
<td></td>
<td>Cubic</td>
<td>52,89</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pr$_2$O$_3$</td>
<td>25.4-16</td>
<td>4.1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Hexagonal</td>
<td>54,90</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dy$_2$O$_3$</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>4.9</td>
<td>0.78</td>
<td></td>
<td>Cubic</td>
<td>77,94,95</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gd$_2$O$_3$</td>
<td>24</td>
<td>5.8</td>
<td>2.21</td>
<td>2.44</td>
<td>Cubic</td>
<td>49,87</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>16</td>
<td>4.1</td>
<td>2.1</td>
<td></td>
<td>Cubic</td>
<td>91</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>La$_2$O$_3$</td>
<td>30</td>
<td>6.0</td>
<td>2.36</td>
<td>2.56</td>
<td>Hexagonal, cubic</td>
<td>2,87</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Y$_2$O$_3$</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>5.6</td>
<td>2.36</td>
<td>2.56</td>
<td>Cubic</td>
<td>2,87</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Material</td>
<td>#</td>
<td>Density (g/cm³)</td>
<td>a (Å)</td>
<td>c/a</td>
<td>Crystal Structure</td>
<td>References</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>--------------</td>
<td>----</td>
<td>----------------</td>
<td>-------</td>
<td>-----</td>
<td>------------------</td>
<td>------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sc₂O₃</td>
<td>14</td>
<td>~6.2</td>
<td>2.36</td>
<td>2.56</td>
<td>Cubic</td>
<td>62,87,93</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SrTiO₃</td>
<td>300</td>
<td>3.3</td>
<td>0.11</td>
<td>0.37</td>
<td>Cubic</td>
<td>87</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LaAlO₃</td>
<td>26</td>
<td>5.7</td>
<td>1.53</td>
<td>1.72</td>
<td>Amorphous</td>
<td>61,62,87</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>~13</td>
<td></td>
<td>5.7</td>
<td>1.53</td>
<td>1.72</td>
<td>Amorphous</td>
<td>61,62,87,54</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LaLuO₃</td>
<td>~32</td>
<td>5.2</td>
<td>2.1</td>
<td></td>
<td>Amorphous</td>
<td>80</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LaScO₃</td>
<td>~22</td>
<td>5.7</td>
<td>2.0</td>
<td></td>
<td>Amorphous</td>
<td>62,82</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GdScO₃</td>
<td>~22</td>
<td>5.6</td>
<td>2.0</td>
<td></td>
<td>Amorphous</td>
<td>62,82</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DyScO₃</td>
<td>~22</td>
<td>5.7</td>
<td>2.0</td>
<td></td>
<td>Amorphous</td>
<td>62,82</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Figure 3 Bandgaps and the bandgap discontinuities between various high-κ dielectric materials and Si along with the well known SiO₂ and Si₃N₄.

The gate dielectric should also be uniform in crystalline structure and in physical properties. In polycrystalline dielectric layers, grain boundaries have a large density of electronic states, which serve as pathways for leakage current and result in non-uniform distribution of leakage which, besides being undesirable in the first place, can give rise to large statistical variations for nanometer-sized devices across the chip. Furthermore, grain boundaries serve as pathways for diffusion of Si, O, and dopant elements. For the stated reasons, polycrystalline films are not suitable for the purpose of device fabrication.
Instead, either amorphous or *extremely high quality* single crystalline (if available at all) dielectric layer should be used. There are a number of factors which favor amorphous layers: *i*) there is only a single amorphous structure for a given composition that implies uniform physical properties; *ii*) there are no dislocations or grain boundaries; *iii*) stress can be eliminated by moderate topological variations in a random network rather than through misfit dislocations; *iv*) a continuous random network tends to minimize electrically active defects.

### 2.1 High-κ dielectric layer growth

As discussed above, the reliable and high quality high-κ gate dielectric films are critical to scaled MOSFET. For this reason the growth of the high-κ dielectric is very important and has received much attention. Various thin film deposition techniques such as reactive thermal evaporation,\(^{97}\) atomic layer deposition (ALD),\(^{78,98,99}\), metal-organic chemical vapor deposition (MOCVD),\(^{106,107}\) pulsed-laser deposition (PLD),\(^{108}\) and molecular beam-epitaxy (MBE)\(^{109,110}\) have all been employed to varying degrees to produce them. The properties of the thin films so produced have been reported to be closely dependent on the growth method. Studies to gain insight into any correlation amongst the properties of the films, the interfacial layers, and growth conditions have been undertaken.

#### 2.1.1 Atomic Layer Deposition

ALD, a variant of CVD, is a popular technique used to deposit the ultra thin metal-oxide layers with excellent electrical characteristics and near-perfect structure
because of the layer-by-layer nature of the deposition kinetics. The growth mechanism of the ALD can be simply expressed as the surface exchange reactions between the chemisorbed metal-containing precursor fragments and adsorbed nucleophilic reactant molecules. The growth surface becomes saturated with the governing precursor so that the deposition automatically self-limits at one or two monolayers. Therefore, the growth rate in the system is independent of the precursor dose as it is surface-controlled. The ALD growth mechanism can be described as a four-step process\textsuperscript{111}, wherein a precursor gas is initially introduced followed by an inert gas to remove the unreacted species from the surface (see Figure 4).

These first 2 steps are then followed by the introduction of the second reactive gas to the surface, which again is followed by the inert gas to remove the unreacted species. This 4-step process is repeated until a film of desired thickness is obtained. Similar to other CVD processes, there is an optimal growth condition for ALD, called the “ALD-window”, which signifies the temperature range in which thin film growth proceeds by surface control in the ALD-mode.\textsuperscript{112} Outside the ALD-window, the growth is limited by precursor condensation, decomposition, and insufficient reactivity.

Unfortunately, many of organometallic precursors commonly used for oxide growth do not exhibit a distinct ALD window. Thus, the deposition rate in these processes is dependent on the temperature, while the self-limiting feature of the ALD processes remains. Besides, ALD-grown films usually have a relatively high concentration of residual impurities due to the use of precursors, which is unfavorable for gate dielectrics. Thus, the choice of precursors providing low contamination and ability to self-limit is a critical issue for the ALD growth of high-quality oxide films. Many
precursors have been investigated in an attempt to find the optimal growth window for each of the high-κ oxide and reduce the by-product contamination. For the most promising materials, halide, metal alkoxide, and alkylamide precursors have been widely used in the ALD growth. HfO$_2$, ZrO$_2$, PrO$_2$, GdScO$_3$, and other oxide films prepared by ALD deposition using various precursors have been reported. The details will not be discussed here due to limited focus but they can be found elsewhere.
2.1.1 Metal-organic chemical vapor deposition

MOCVD is a widely used technique of epitaxial growth of thin films. Recently, as the high-κ dielectric materials came under extensive investigations, MOCVD emerged as a viable candidate for high-κ film deposition on Si. To be applicable to high-κ dielectrics films, however, this method should be modified. This is because many oxide precursors used for the high-κ materials have low pressure and low thermal stability, both of which are detrimental to the growth. This problem can be solved by applying liquid injection of precursors dissolved in a solvent. Even then, there remain some requirements for the precursors to meet: the precursors should be soluble and stable but not reactive to each other in the same liquid solution. In addition, it would be desirable to have precursors with nearly the same vapor pressure at conveniently attainable temperatures to avoid multiple refrigeration/heating units that house the precursor sources. These requirements place sever restrictions on the choice of precursors. Thus, as in the case of ALD, the precursor selection is of paramount importance for MOCVD growth of high-κ films.

A number of high-κ oxide films have been grown by the liquid injection MOCVD method. For example, Bastianini et al. deposited ZrO₂ thin films using Zr(NEt₂)₄ (NEt₂= N(C₂H₅)₂) as a precursor. Hendrix et al. prepared Hf₁₋ₓSiₓO₂ with compositions ranging from pure HfO₂ to pure SiO₂ using tetrakis(diethylamido)hafnium Hf[N(C₂H₅)₂]₄ and tetrakis(diethylamido)silicon Si[N(CH₃)₂]₄ liquid precursors. Marshall et al. used metal alkoxide precursors
[Hf(mmp)$_4$] (mmp = OCMe$_2$CH$_2$OMe) and [Al(O$i$Pr)$_3$] to deposit hafnium aluminate (HfO$_2$)$_x$(Al$_2$O$_3$)$_{1-x}$ thin films. The layers were found to be of high purity without any detectable amount of carbon. Good control over Al incorporation was achieved by varying the gas-phase mole fraction of [Al(O$i$Pr)$_3$].

It should be mentioned that both the MOCVD and ALD techniques provide high crystal quality, uniform deposition over large areas and three-dimensional structures, and are compatible with the standard semiconductor technology. As compared to ALD, MOCVD provides much higher throughput, but typically requires higher deposition temperatures. From the standpoint of the gate dielectric application, requiring low film thicknesses and high aspect ratios, ALD seems to be the most suitable method for ultrathin high-κ film deposition due to its capability of growing highly conformal layers with atomic level accuracy in thickness.

2.1.2 Pulsed-Laser Deposition

PLD is also applied to the high-κ dielectric film growth owing to its advantages such as relative simplicity, large deposition rate, and low growth temperature. Ratzke et al. deposited HfO$_2$ and PrO$_x$ films on Si substrates by the PLD method and compared their morphology, chemical composition, and crystalline structure, in particular that at the interface. Both HfO$_2$ and PrO$_x$ films showed grainy structure the size of which increasing with growth temperature. The PrO$_x$ films were found to be much more uniform than HfO$_2$. The interfaces were significantly different for both materials in that a silicate formation was observed for PrO$_x$, whereas a rich abundance of SiO$_2$ and silicide was found for HfO$_2$. In addition to PrO$_x$, several other lanthanoid oxide thin films such as
SmScO$_3$, Sm$_2$O$_3$, Tb$_4$O$_7$, Er$_2$O$_3$, and Yb$_2$O$_3$ have also been attempted with this method on Si(100) wafers. PrO$_x$ film showed thinner equivalent oxide thickness (EOT) and a lower leakage current. The PrO$_x$ films with EOT of 2.6 nm and a leakage current density of $2 \times 10^{-3}$ A/cm$^2$ at -1 V have been achieved after annealing at 600°C. Some films grown by PLD turn out to be amorphous, among which are zirconium silicate films on n-Si (100) substrates. The amorphous Zr-rich Zr silicate films showed excellent thermal stability: they remained amorphous even after rapid thermal annealing (RTA) at 800°C. Silicon oxynitride (SiO$_x$N$_y$) thin films have also been grown by combining the PLD plume containing silicon species in an oxygen background with a remote plasma-based atomic nitrogen source (ANS).

### 2.1.3 Molecular beam epitaxy

MBE is a powerful and sophisticated technique due to its precise control over growth parameters at the atomic scale. Despite these strengths, MBE is not very popular for the high-κ dielectric deposition. In order to meet the high-κ materials growth requirements, MBE systems must be modified due to the corrosive oxygen environment, oxygen reaction with the source material in cells, and difficulties associated with production of reactive oxygen sources. Against this background, various high-κ dielectric oxides have been successfully grown by MBE. For example, Lin et al. grown Gd$_2$O$_3$ epitaxial thin films on nearly lattice-matched (111)Si substrates by MBE. Detailed structural studies have revealed excellent crystallinity of the layers and atomically sharp interfaces. Vellianitis et al. have grown perovskite-like LaAlO$_3$ and pyrochlore La$_2$Hf$_2$O$_7$ on the SiO$_2$/Si substrates. The values of EOT of 1.1 nm and leakage...
current of $2 \times 10^{-3}$ A/cm$^2$ at 1V for the LaAlO$_3$, and EOT of 1.14 nm, and leakage current of $4 \times 10^{-5}$ A/cm$^2$ at 1V for La$_2$Hf$_2$O$_7$ were achieved. Triyoso et al.$^8$ reported MBE growth of LaLuO$_3$ films. The oxide film was formed by co-deposition of elemental La, Lu in the presence of molecular oxygen. Post deposition anneals were performed in either nitrogen or oxygen at 700 °C environment, or nitrogen at 900°C. Cross-sectional transmission electron microscopy (TEM) revealed that the as-deposited layers were amorphous, and the LaLuO$_3$/Si interface was quite sharp with an extremely thin interfacial layer. TEM studies indicated also good thermal stability of the films: they remained mostly amorphous after post-growth annealings, although secondary ion mass spectrometry (SIMS) data indicated Si interdiffusion into LaLuO$_3$, likely forming LaLuO$_3$-silicate, and an increase in the thickness of the SiO$_2$ interfacial layer upon annealing.

Laser molecular beam epitaxy (LMBE), combining the merits of both PLD and conventional MBE for depositing films with atomic scale thickness control, was used to grow the HfO$_2$ film in an oxygen ambient.$^{145}$ It was found that the growth of the interfacial layer depends strongly on the oxygen partial pressure. Another variant of MBE is metalorganic molecular beam epitaxy (MOMBE). Due to source evaporation at a well-controlled rate under ultra high vacuum condition, this technique allows obtaining abrupt interfaces and good thickness control. MOMBE has been applied for the growth of HfO$_2$$^{146}$ and ZrO$_2$$^{147}$ films. MOMBE-grown HfO$_2$ films were found to have a dielectric constant of 20–22 and low leakage current density of $\sim 10^{-8}$ A/cm$^2$. Electrical characteristics and surface morphology of the HfO$_2$ films showed a strong dependence on the O$_2$/Ar gas flow ratio. As the O$_2$/Ar gas ratio increased, the density of interface states
and negative fixed charges in the films decreased and the surface morphology improved.

### 2.2 Doping of high κ dielectrics

Beyond the preparation of the high-quality high-κ films, the critical issue is their stability and processing compatibility with the standard CMOS processing steps. Various dopant atoms are added to the dielectrics in order to enhance the stability of the high-κ films, especially the stability of the high-κ/Si interface, and decrease the gate current leakage. Among them, nitrogen incorporation has been shown to reduce the leakage current efficiently. Nitrogen doping can also suppress crystallization during high-temperature treatment, reduce penetration of boron (from B-doped bulk Si and poly-Si gate, where B concentration is continually increased to combat the short channel effects), and increase the dielectric constant of the high-κ films. Furthermore, accumulation of N at the SiO₂/Si interface can improve hot carrier resistance, and the use of oxynitrides can also suppress B diffusion from a poly-Si gate to SiO₂. There have been several reports on the incorporation of nitrogen into binary metal oxides aimed at increasing crystallization temperature through high-temperature annealing in oxygen-free N₂ plasma, and NH₃ ambient. However, nitridization of high-κ dielectric materials in NH₃ results in increased interface trap density and deterioration of the interfacial carrier mobility. At the atomic level, N atoms act to couple favorably with oxygen vacancies (Vₐ) in HfO₂ and extract electrons from Vₐ and elevate the Vₐ energy level. Consequently, N incorporation removes the electron leakage paths mediated by Vₐ-related gap states by...
deactivating the $V_0$-related gap states. This leakage path elimination mechanism is schematically depicted in Figure 5.

Figure 5 Schematic illustration of N incorporation effects: (a) N-induced atomistic relaxation around $V_0$. (1) Electron transfer from $V_0$ to N atoms; (2) outward movement of Hf$^{4+}$ ions due to the increase in Hf$^{4+}$–Hf$^{4+}$ Coulomb repulsion; (b) N-induced elimination of leakage paths; (3) drastic $V_0$ level elevation due to the decrease in attractive Coulomb interaction with Hf$^{4+}$ ions around $V_0$; (4) removal of leakage paths owing to the elimination of a $V_0$ level. Reprinted with permission Ref. 153.

Another impurity that has been studied for high-$\kappa$ dielectric doping is fluorine (F). When incorporated, F atoms act as an effective passivant for reducing the trap density in the high-$\kappa$ films, because it is the only element that is more electronegative than O but with comparable bond length. The F atoms substitute for O vacancies (F$_O$) in gate oxides and reduce the charge trap density and lower the pFET threshold voltage. Furthermore, F incorporation can reduce the CV hysteresis and improve the device reliability. However, the gate leakage increases due to the EOT reduction caused by F incorporation.
Other impurity atoms that have been studied in this context are Al and Si, which, when incorporated, have been shown to enhance the thermal stability of high-κ films. One drawback of HfO$_2$ is that it crystallizes at a relatively low temperature of about 400°C. However, in the standard Si-based CMOS processing relatively higher temperature annealing steps are frequently used, which causes at least partial crystallization of the otherwise amorphous HfO$_2$ dielectric layer. By adding about 30% Al, the crystallization temperature of HfO$_2$ can be increased by 400 °C–500 °C above that of pure HfO$_2$. The downside is that introduction of Al atoms into HfO$_2$ lowers its dielectric constant. Furthermore, the negative fixed oxide charge due to Al accumulation at the HfAlO/Si interface results in mobility degradation. The fixed charge acts as scattering centers and degrades the channel carrier transport. Compared with Al, addition of 20% Si makes the HfO$_2$ dielectric layer withstand a 5-s long rapid annealing at 1000°C without any extensive HfO$_2$ crystal formation in the layer. Detailed structural analyses indicated that the major part of HfSiO remained amorphous but a small fraction crystallized into the tetragonal or orthorhombic phase. The caveat is that HfSiO can fully phase separate into HfO$_2$ and SiO$_2$ via spinodal decomposition after 900°C O$_2$ RTA treatment.

As an alternative to Al and Si dopants, which deteriorate the dielectric constant, introduction of La and Y into HfO$_2$ has been studied. By adding La atoms, the crystallization temperature of HfO$_2$ can be raised to 900°C, without compromising on the dielectric constant ($\kappa = 20$ can be achieved). Doping with Y was found to increase the dielectric permittivity of HfO$_2$: $\kappa$ as high as 27 was obtained by 4 at. % Y doping. The increase in permittivity was explained by a change in crystal structure of the oxide...
induced by the introduction of Y, despite Y. Indeed, under annealing at 600 °C, pure HfO$_2$ crystallized in a monoclinic phase, while Y-doped HfO$_2$ films prepared by co-sputtering of HfO$_2$ and Y$_2$O$_3$ had a cubic structure which, as predicted theoretically,$^{164}$ should have much larger dielectric response than the monoclinic phase.

### 2.3 Remaining challenges

Electrical properties of high-κ dielectric films and their integration with the conventional CMOS processing are the main topics of research now. In the context of compatibility with the Si MOSFET technology, the high-κ oxides present many challenges, among them are incompatibility with annealing temperatures used for activating poly-Si gates, relatively poor quality which causes charge trapping and makes the Si MOSFET gate unstable, channel mobility degradation, and threshold voltage shift induced by high-κ material.

In addition to the compatibility of the gate dielectric stack with Si and the processing steps, the suitability of the gate electrode for the particular high-κ oxide stack is also critical. Poly-Si has been the dominant gate electrode until recently. However, annealing above 1000°C for the poly-Si activation is harmful to high-κ films. To reiterate, annealing of HfO$_2$ gate dielectric at high temperatures causes the crystallization of amorphous HfO$_2$ into the monoclinic polycrystal which is not insulating.$^{165}$ In addition, a 5-10Å layer of SiO$_2$ is formed at the interface, which eliminates in part the benefits to be gained from high-κ dielectric.$^{166}$ As discussed earlier, Si, N, or Al is added to the gate oxide material to increase its crystallization temperature.$^{72,167}$
Another approach to this problem is the use of metal electrodes instead of conventional poly-Si. When incorporating a new metal electrode, complications related to channel mobility and threshold voltage shift arise. A relative disadvantage of the metal electrodes is that, unlike the poly-Si gate electrodes, they cannot be used for both $n$- and $p$-MOS simply by adding different dopants. There is no such versatility when a metal gate with a fixed work function is used. Two methods are usually implemented for employing metal electrodes. The first is the so-called “midgap metals”, such as TiN\(^{168}\), which causes the Fermi level to be at the midgap of Si, as shown in Figure 6a.\(^2\) The advantage of this method is symmetrical threshold voltage ($V_T$) values for both $n$-MOS and $p$-MOS, because the Fermi level being at the midgap would allow for the same energy difference between the metal Fermi level and the conduction and valence bands of Si. This approach allows a simpler CMOS processing scheme, where only one mask and one metal would be required for the gate electrode, and no ion implantation step would be needed. A severe drawback of this method is too high threshold voltage (~0.5 V for both $n$-MOS and $p$-MOS), while typical threshold voltages for sub-0.13 mm CMOS devices are desired to be lower, ~0.2–0.3 V.\(^2\)

The second approach involves the use of two different metals for $n$- and $p$-MOS, as shown in Figure 6b.\(^2\) The possible choices of metal electrodes, however, are limited by their thermal stability. Most of the low-work-function metals are reactive and not stable at high temperatures used in the conventional Si MOSFET processing, whereas most of the mid-bandgap metals are stable under these kinds of processing.
Reduction of carrier mobility in the inversion layer of Si MOSFETs is another important issue in considering high-κ dielectric gate oxides. Unlike SiO₂, the high-κ dielectrics have soft optical phonons, and the long-range dipole field associated with the interface excitations resulting from these phonon modes and from their coupling with surface plasmons causes degradation of the effective electron mobility in the inversion layer. Figure 7 compares values of the effective electron mobility in the inversion layer at the interface between Si and an infinitely thick film of several insulators. Figure 8 shows the effects of all the scattering and degradation mechanisms on the inversion channel carrier mobility summarized by Yang et al. An effort was made to improve mobility values by doping. It was found that addition of Si into the HfO₂ enhances the mobility due to the reduction of the remote phonon scattering. As for the N incorporation, the mobility is usually reduced, because N incorporation induces fixed
charge in the high-κ layer and the resulting Coulomb scattering by the fixed charge reduces the carrier mobility.\textsuperscript{172}

Figure 7. Effective electron mobility in Si inversion layers of MOS systems with the insulators indicated. A triangular well approximation has been used to model the subband structure of the inversion layer. Reprinted with permission Ref. 169
Figure 8 Schematic representation of factors contributing to carrier mobility degradation in a high-κ oxide layer. Reprinted with permission Ref. 170

The last issue that we will discuss here is the threshold voltage shift of the poly-Si/high-κ dielectric stack. Hobbs et al. 173,174 explained the shift by the Fermi-level pinning at the interface, which in turn was attributed interfacial Si–Hf and Si–O–Al bonds for HfO₂ and Al₂O₃, respectively. Oxygen vacancies at poly-Si/HfO₂ interfaces also lead to Fermi pinning. The interface states partially screen the electric field from the gate electrode, preventing it from modulating the channel completely. An efficient method to reduce the threshold voltage shift is to add a layer of Al₂O₃ on top of the oxide layer. Kim et al. 175 reported the Fermi-level effect free HfO₂ gate stack by depositing an Al₂O₃ capping layer onto HfSiOₓ. The p-MOS gate threshold shift was only 0.2 V. It is likely that the negative fixed charge is introduced into the oxide layer when Al₂O₃ is added. Frank et al. 176 used an AlN capping layer to prevent the threshold voltage shift and also obtained shift values as low as 0.2 V. Besides the Al₂O₃ cap layer, other oxides have been applied to prevent the threshold voltage shift. For example, Alshareef et al. 177 used La₂O₃ to passivate HfSiOₓ on N-MOSFET. A reduction of the threshold voltage by as much as 0.25 V was achieved. Passivation of HfSiO dielectric with a 0.5-2 nm thick Dy₂O₃ cap layer resulted in a threshold voltage of 0.2 eV. 178

Clearly, the high-κ dielectric materials and related techniques are crucial for continuing the Si-based scaling engineering. Although many investigations have been devoted to different aspects of the preparation and properties of high-κ dielectrics and their integration with conventional Si devices, there are still many obstacles that need to be conquered. In terms of the deposition aspects, the precursors and growth conditions...
for the high-κ films should be honed in and/or optimized further. The thermal stability issue should be addressed with the aim to increase the crystallization temperature of the high-κ oxides to prevent the crystallization of amorphous dielectric films during subsequent high temperature processing. The gate electrodes suitable for the high-κ oxide stack and processing integration compatibility also need further research and development. A search for new high-κ dielectric materials is now in progress. Some multicomponent oxides, such as LaLuO₃ and rare-earth scandates LaScO₃, GdScO₃, DyScO₃, and SmScO₃, exhibit high dielectric constants (similar to or exceeding that of HfO₂), wide band gaps, and large band offsets of ≥2 eV to both the valence and conduction bands of Si (see Table 1), low leakage current, and superior thermal stability of amorphous phase.⁸⁵,¹⁷⁹,¹⁸⁰ These oxides are now under intensive investigations for potential high-κ applications,⁶²,⁸⁰,⁸₂,⁸³,⁸⁴,⁸⁵,⁸⁶,¹₁⁸,⁷⁷ and, in the future, could compete with Hf-based oxides as gate dielectrics for Si-based MOSFETs.

3 Ferroelectric Oxides

3.1 Brief history of ferroelectrics

The birth of ferroelectrics can probably be traced back to 1921 when Valashek [¹⁸¹] observed nonlinear electrical properties of potassium sodium tartrate tetrahydrate (KNaC₄H₄O₆·4H₂O), a material which was known for more than two centuries due to Pier Seignette from La Rochelle, France, who first prepared it in 1672. In this compound, also known as Rochelle salt, Pierre and Jacques Curie discovered piezoelectricity in 1880, some 40 years before the observations of Valashek. However, the discovery of Valasek did not become a subject of interest among the scientists for the first decade, particularly
because the Rochelle salt was the only compound at that time showing such interesting properties. In addition, very small deviations of the composition from the chemical stoichiometry destroyed the phenomenon completely. First theoretical interpretation of ferroelectricity was done by Kurchatov in 1933.\textsuperscript{182} In 1935, Busch and Scherrer\textsuperscript{183} produced another ferroelectric crystal, potassium dihydrogen phosphate (KH$_2$PO$_4$, abbreviated as KDP). KDP exhibited good piezoelectric properties above Curie point and was successfully used as underwater transducer and detector during World War II.

Ten years later, in 1945, a new type of ferroelectric - barium titanate BaTiO$_3$ - was discovered,\textsuperscript{184} although some reports go as far back as 1927.\textsuperscript{185} Having phase transition at 120 °C, BaTiO$_3$ was a very important discovery since it was the first ferroelectric structure without hydrogen bonds and had more than one ferroelectric phase. The same year, Ginsburg developed a phenomenological theory of BaTiO$_3$ based on Landau’s general theory of phase transitions.\textsuperscript{186} Several years later a number of ferroelectrics began to increase rapidly. New representatives of perovskite-type crystals were discovered: potassium niobate (K NbO$_3$) in 1949, lead titanate (PbTiO$_3$) in 1950, and antiferroelectric lead zirconate (PbZrO$_3$) in 1951. These compounds were followed by guanidine aluminum sulphate hexahydrate C(NH$_2$)$_3$Al(SO$_4$)$_2$·6H$_2$O (abbreviated as GASH) in 1955 and tryglicine sulphate in 1955. In 1959, Smolensky and Agranovskaya\textsuperscript{187} discovered ferroelectric properties of PbBi$_2$Nb$_2$O$_9$, a representative compound of a large family of Bi-layer structured ferroelectrics. Then, Smolensky et al.\textsuperscript{188} and Subbarao\textsuperscript{189} confirmed ferroelectric properties for a large number of Bi-layer materials with a general formula (Bi$_2$O$_2$)$_{2+}(A_{m-1}B_{m}O_{3m+1})^{2-}$, where $m$ is an integer number, $A$ can be one-, two-, or tree-valence ions, and $B$ represents Ti$^{4+}$, Nb$^{5+}$, Ta$^{5+}$ or a
combination of them. From the very beginning, it was realized that the layered structure of these compounds, where perovskite blocks are interleaved with Bi$_2$O$_2$ layers, should lead to high dielectric, ferroelectric, and piezoelectric anisotropy due to the predominantly two-dimensional character of ferroelectric switching. At the end of the 1960s, Cummins and Cross$^{190}$ could demonstrate highly anisotropic optical and electrical properties of Bi$_4$Ti$_3$O$_{12}$, one of the most popular Bi-layer structured ferroelectrics, which will be discussed in more details below. The strong anisotropy is a major limiting factor in piezoelectric applications of the Bi-layer structured ceramics and single crystals.

Renewed interest in Bi-layer structured ferroelectrics came in the mid-1990s, when it was understood that, along with the high switching polarization and sufficiently low coercive field, some of these materials, namely SrBi$_2$Ta$_2$O$_9$ and SrBi$_2$Nb$_2$O$_9$, are resistive to polarization fatigue.$^{191, 192}$ Paz de Araujo et al.$^{192}$ showed that capacitors made of SrBi$_2$Ta$_2$O$_9$, SrBi$_2$NbTaO$_9$ and SrBi$_4$Ta$_4$O$_{15}$ do not show significant fatigue after $10^{12}$ switching cycles, and they exhibited good retention characteristics and low leakage currents even with films less than 100 nm thick. The unique peroperties of these materials made them very perspective for FeRAMs.$^{193, 194}$

Today there are about known 1000 ferroelectrics. A list of some ferroelectrics, year of their discovery and some important properties are given in Table 2. Further information beyond Table 2 about these compounds can be found in books.$^{183,195,196,197}$
Table 2 A list of ferroelectrics materials and their pertinent properties.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Compound</th>
<th>Chemical formula</th>
<th>Year discovered</th>
<th>Symmetry at room temp.</th>
<th>Curie point, $T_c$, K</th>
<th>Remanent polarization, $P_e \mu K cm^{-2}$</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Rochelle salt</td>
<td>KNaC$_4$H$_4$O$_6$·4H$_2$O</td>
<td>1921</td>
<td>Monoclinic between the Curie points Orthorhombic at other temperatures</td>
<td>255 and 297</td>
<td>0.25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Barium titanate</td>
<td>BaTiO$_3$</td>
<td>1945</td>
<td>tetragonal</td>
<td>398</td>
<td>25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lithium niobate</td>
<td>LiNbO$_3$</td>
<td>1949</td>
<td>Trigonal</td>
<td>1415</td>
<td>10-30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Potassium niobate</td>
<td>KNbO$_3$</td>
<td>1949</td>
<td>Orthorhombic</td>
<td>400</td>
<td>20-40</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Guanidine aluminum sulphite hexahydrate</td>
<td>C(NH$_2$)$_3$Al(SO$_4$)$_2$·6H$_2$O</td>
<td>1955</td>
<td>Trigonal</td>
<td>473</td>
<td>0.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Potassium dihydrogen phosphate</td>
<td>KH$_2$PO$_4$</td>
<td>1935</td>
<td>Orthorhombic</td>
<td>123</td>
<td>6.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lead titanate</td>
<td>PbTiO$_3$</td>
<td>1950</td>
<td>tetragonal</td>
<td>763</td>
<td>20-96.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lead zirconate</td>
<td>PbZrO$_3$</td>
<td>1951</td>
<td>Orthorhombic</td>
<td>503</td>
<td>20-50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lead zirconate titanate</td>
<td>PbZr$_{1-x}$Ti$_x$O$_3$</td>
<td>1949</td>
<td>Tetragonal for Ti-rich and Rhombohedral for Zr-rich</td>
<td>Depends on composition</td>
<td>20-97</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Strontium bismute tantalate</td>
<td>SrBi$_2$Ta$_2$O$_9$</td>
<td>1960</td>
<td>Orthorhombic</td>
<td>600</td>
<td>30-70</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Barium strontium titanate</td>
<td>Ba$<em>{0.73}$Sr$</em>{0.27}$TiO$_3$</td>
<td>1960</td>
<td>Tetragonal</td>
<td>298</td>
<td>10-30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bismute titanate</td>
<td>Bi$_4$Ti$_3$O$_12$</td>
<td>1961</td>
<td>Orthorhombic</td>
<td>953</td>
<td>10-30</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
3.2 Basic properties of ferroelectrics

Ferroelectrics belong to a wider class of materials called pyroelectrics, which in turn belong to a piezoelectric class. Pyroelectricity is the phenomenon that electric charge is created in certain materials as a result of temperature change, and piezoelectricity is the ability to generate an electric potential in response to applied mechanical stress (and vice versa). All pyroelectric materials are also piezoelectric, but the opposite is not true. For example, quartz is piezoelectric, but not pyroelectric. All ferroelectric materials also exhibit piezoelectricity and pyroelectricity, but not vice versa. For example, the wide bandgap materials such as GaN, AlN, and ZnO are not ferroelectric materials although they are both piezoelectric and pyroelectric. Ferroelectrics are a class of materials exhibiting spontaneous polarization below the ferroelectric Curie temperature ($T_C$), and the polarization direction can be changed by applied electric field. At temperatures above $T_C$, the crystals are non-polar and no longer ferroelectric and behave like normal dielectrics. Generally there may exist more than one Curie temperature, although most of the ferroelectrics have one Curie point. The Rochelle salt $\text{KNaC}_4\text{H}_4\text{O}_6\cdot4\text{H}_2\text{O}$, for example, has two Curie points, one at 24°C and one at -18°C, so that the ferroelectric state exists in the temperature range from -18 to +24°C. The polar ferroelectric phase is monoclinic, while paraelectric phase outside the temperature region of -18°C – +24°C is orthorhombic. There are also ferroelectric materials, for example guanidine aluminum sulphate hexahydrate $\text{C(NH}_2)\text{3Al(SO}_4)\text{2} \cdot 6\text{H}_2\text{O}$ (GASH) which does not exhibit a Curie point because the material begins to decompose before the Curie temperature is reached.
The dielectric constants of ferroelectric materials are extremely high, especially near the Curie temperature.

A ferroelectric crystal consists of domains, i.e. regions with uniform spontaneous polarization. The boundary of two neighboring domains is called a domain wall. In the absence of electrical field, the domains are randomly oriented that results in near complete compensation of polarization. When an external electric field is applied, the domains become oriented along the field causing polarization of the material. The switching of domain orientation proceeds through domain-wall motion. Domain dynamics and a domain’s contribution to dielectric, piezoelectric, pyroelectric, and ferroelectric properties has been identified as the key physical phenomenon in ferroelectrics, and hence a subject of extensive scientific research.\textsuperscript{198, 199} The most prominent feature of a ferroelectric material is the reversibility of permanent polarization, which results in a hysteresis loop in the dependence of polarization $P$ on electric field $E$, analogous to magnetization curves in ferromagnetic materials. A typical view of hysteresis P-E loop is shown in Figure 9. The hysteresis loop is characterized by saturation polarization $P_s$, remanent polarization $P_r$, and coercive field $E_c$. Saturation polarization is the maximum polarization that can be reached, remanent polarization is the polarization present when no electric field is applied, and coercive field is a value of electric field which is required to bring the polarization to zero. The P-E hysteresis loop results from the domain structure of the ferroelectric which is formed below the Curie temperature in an effort to minimize the depolarization field.

In short, the most distinguishing features of ferroelectrics are: spontaneous polarization below Curie temperature $T_C$, nonlinear dependence of polarization on...
electric field, presence of domain structure below \( T_C \), high values of dielectric constants (up to \( 2 \times 10^4 \)), and high values of piezoelectric and pyroelectric constants.

Figure 9 Typical polarization vs. electric field (P-E) hysteresis loop of ferroelectrics.

Ferroelectric oxides have attracted great attention for device applications, one of which is ferroelectric RAM, because of their ability to retain two stable polarization states. To obtain long-term operation (consistent polarization switching over many cycles of applied electric field, more than \( 10^{12} \) is desirable), which is a critical issue to realize FeRAM, it is imperative to overcome the reliability problems, such as fatigue, retention, and imprint. Conventional ferroelectric capacitors based on \( \text{Pb(Zr,Ti)}_3 \) films on Si wafers coupled with Pt top/bottom electrodes show strong loss of switchable polarization with repeated cycling, known as fatigue. Factors affecting fatigue include intrinsic properties of ferroelectric oxides (crystal quality, microstructure, crystallographic orientation, defects, domain structure, film thickness) as well as extrinsic factors (interactions between film and substrate, temperature, and pressure). Excellent reviews of the physical and chemical mechanisms of the fatigue phenomenon in ferroelectric ceramics and various fatigue models can be found in the reports by Lupascu\textsuperscript{200} and Lupascu and Roedel.\textsuperscript{201} The suggested mechanisms of fatigue so far consider inhibition
of nucleation and growth of oppositely polarized domains, polarization pinning, development of interfacial passive layers, appearance of 90° domains, and so on. Several mechanisms of fatigue can be operative simultaneously.

Another important failure mechanism in ferroelectric thin films for FeRAM applications is imprint, which is basically the preference of one polarization state over the other and is essentially caused by asymmetric behavior of polarization states. The imprint behavior is believed to be closely related to oxygen vacancies, defect-dipole complexes, and trapping of free charges.\textsuperscript{202,203,204,205} Retention, the ability of maintaining a given logic state of polarization (stored information), is another important characteristic for FeRAM applications. Retention loss reduces the difference between switched (P*) and nonswitched (P') polarizations (i.e., $\Delta P = P^* - P' =$ sensing margin of FeRAM). The larger is the margin, the easier is to distinguish between the two logical states in a binary system. Small margins lead to an inability to distinguish between the two logical states. In general, retention loss is related to the imprint, which originates from the presence of internal electric field acting as a depolarizing internal field against the externally applied electric field.\textsuperscript{206}

Let us now discuss briefly crystal structure of the most important ferroelectric materials, such as BaTiO$_3$ (BT), Ba$_x$Sr$_{1-x}$TiO$_3$ (BST), Pb(Zr,Ti)O$_3$ (PZT), SrBi$_2$Ta$_2$O$_9$ (SBT), Bi$_4$Ti$_3$O$_{12}$ (BIT), Bi$_4$$_x$La$_x$Ti$_3$O$_{12}$ (BLT) and Bi$_4$$_x$Nd$_x$Ti$_3$O$_{12}$ (BNT).

### 3.2.1 BaTiO$_3$ (BT)

BaTiO$_3$ (abbreviated as BT) has tetragonally distorted perovskite structure, which belongs to ABO$_3$ family of perovskite mineral CaTiO$_3$. In this perovskite crystal
structure, A and B are metal ions, the total charge of which is +6. The A and B ions must be of different radii, and the smaller ion must be of larger charge in order to exhibit ferroelectric behavior. In BaTiO₃, for example, the radius of Ba²⁺ is 1.35 Å, and the radius of Ti⁴⁺ is 0.68 Å. The crystal structure of ABO₃ type perovskite structure is shown in Figure 10.²⁰⁷ As seen from Figure 10, the structure can be described also as a set of BO₆ octahedra arranged in a simple cubic pattern, with A atoms located in spaces between the octahedra. Above the Curie temperature, BT has the cubic perovskite structure and is paraelectric. Below the Curie temperature, a structural distortion takes place, leading to lower symmetry and off-center shift of the Ti⁴⁺ cation. As a result, spontaneous polarization appears in BT. Various dopants are used to modify the properties of pure BT. For example, Zr and Hf, substituting for Ti in the BaTiO₃ lattice, are utilized to increase chemical stability and decrease dielectric loss of the material.²⁰⁸,²⁰⁹,²¹⁰

![ABO₃ cubic perovskite structure](image)

Figure 10 ABO₃ cubic perovskite structure Reprinted with permission Ref. 207.
3.2.2 Ba$_x$Sr$_{1-x}$TiO$_3$ (BST)

Barium strontium titanate, Ba$_x$Sr$_{1-x}$TiO$_3$ (BST), is a solid solution of BaTiO$_3$ and SrTiO$_3$. BaTiO$_3$ and Ba-rich Ba$_x$Sr$_{1-x}$TiO$_3$ compounds have tetragonal lattice and are ferroelectric, while SrTiO$_3$ and Sr-rich Ba$_x$Sr$_{1-x}$TiO$_3$ compounds are cubic and paraelectric at room temperature (see Figure 11, Figure 12). Substituting Ba with Sr results in the decrease of the Curie temperature (Figure 12) and the increase of the dielectric constant of the material. The phase diagram of the BaTiO$_3$ - SrTiO$_3$ system has been studied by several groups. Figure 13 shows the phase diagram in the entire concentration range obtained by Menoret et al. based on neutron (powder diffraction and single crystal inelastic scattering) and high-resolution powder x-ray data. The critical concentration $x_c \approx 0.094$ separates the phase diagram in two regions. The low-temperature structure of Ba$_x$Sr$_{1-x}$TiO$_3$ compounds with $x < x_c$ is tetragonal with a ferroelastic nonferroelectric 14/mcm space group. The compounds with $x > x_c$ show a succession of three ferroelectric phases - $P4mm$ (tetragonal), $Amm2$ (orthorhombic), and $R3m$ (rhombohedral) as temperature decreases.

Exceptionally high values of the dielectric constants have been reported for bulk BST ceramics (2500) and epitaxial films (2000–6000). The high dielectric constant of ferroelectric BST arises from an ionic displacement upon applied electric field, in contrast to materials with lower dielectric constants, such as SiO$_2$, which experience only an electronic displacement. One more important property of BST is the ability to change the dielectric constant and dielectric-loss tangent near the ferroelectric Curie temperature by an externally applied field, which makes this material ideally suited for electrically...
tunable microwave devices, such as resonators, filters, and phase shifters. 221, 222, 223

Figure 11 Lattice parameter of Ba$_{1-x}$Sr$_x$TiO$_3$ versus composition. Reprinted with permission Ref. 211

Figure 12 Curie temperature, $\Theta$ ($^\circ$C) versus composition. Reprinted with permission Ref. 212
3.2.3 PbZr$_{1-x}$Ti$_x$O$_3$ (PZT)

Lead zirconate titanate, PbZr$_{1-x}$Ti$_x$O$_3$ (abbreviated as PZT), is a solid solution of PbTiO$_3$ and PbZrO$_3$ compounds. As many other ferroelectric materials, it has an ABO$_3$ type perovskite structure, where A is a metal ion with a +2 valence (Pb) and B is a metal ion with a +4 valence (Ti, Zr). In the case of PZT, the A positions (corners of the cube) are occupied by Pb$^{2+}$ ions, B positions (body center) by Zr$^{4+}$ or Ti$^{4+}$ ions, and O$^{2-}$ ions occupy the face centers. PbTiO$_3$ has a Curie temperature of 490°C, at which it undergoes a first-order phase transition from cubic paraelectric phase to tetragonal ferroelectric
phase with lattice parameters $c=4.153\,\text{Å}$ and $a=3.899\,\text{Å}$.\textsuperscript{227} In contrast, PbZrO$_3$ ($a=5.886\,\text{Å}$, $b=11.749\,\text{Å}$, $c=8.248\,\text{Å}$\textsuperscript{228}) is an antiferroelectric material at room temperature with a Curie point equal to 230 °C, where a transition from cubic paraelectric to orthorhombic antiferroelectric phase occurs. Above the Curie temperature, PZT is cubic over the whole range of compositions.

The properties of PbZr$_{1-x}$Ti$_x$O$_3$ depend on the fraction of PbTiO$_3$ (that is, $x$) and temperature, according to a PbTiO$_3$-PbZrO$_3$ phase diagram. Figure 14 shows the phase diagram obtained by Woodward et al.\textsuperscript{229} The most prominent feature of this diagram is the existence of a “morphotropic phase boundary” (MPB), which divides the ferroelectric region into two parts: a tetragonal Ti-rich region with space group symmetry $P4mm$ and a rhombohedral Zr-rich region, containing high- and low-temperature phases with symmetries $R3m$ and $R3c$, respectively. There is also another particular region at the phase diagram close to PbZrO$_3$, where the rhombohedral ferroelectric phase changes into an antiferroelectric orthorhombic phase. The MPB occurs at $x\approx 0.47$, and PZT solid solutions of this composition exhibit superior ferroelectric and piezoelectric properties.

It was believed for a long time that the increased ferroelectric sensitivity of PZT at MPB was due to coexistence of tetragonal and rhombohedral phases at MPB. However, more recent structural studies of PZT revealed a monoclinic phase in the vicinity of what was previously regarded as the boundary separating the rhombohedral and tetragonal regions of the PZT phase diagram.\textsuperscript{230,231} One can see a narrow region of monoclinic phases with $Cm$ and $Cc$ symmetries at compositions corresponding to the MPB. Now it is believed that the monoclinic phase is responsible for the unusually high piezoelectric response of
PZT. The existence of the monoclinic phase, however, is not irrefutable, and the phase composition at MPB is still open for debate.\textsuperscript{232}

Figure 14 PbZrO$_3$-PbTiO$_3$ phase diagram according to Woodward et al. Reprinted with permission Ref. 229.

3.2.4 \textbf{SrBi$_2$Ta$_2$O$_9$ (SBT)}

Another important ferroelectric material is SrBi$_2$Ta$_2$O$_9$ (SBT), thanks to its many desirable properties such as fatigue-free characteristics even after 10$^{12}$ switching cycles, good retention characteristics, low switching fields, and low leakage currents.\textsuperscript{192} The ferroelectricity of SBT was discovered in early 1960s by Smolenskii et al.,\textsuperscript{233} a decade after Aurivillius\textsuperscript{234} reported on mixed bismuth oxides with layer lattices in the year 1949. The Curie temperature was determined to be 335 °C with a dielectric constant of 180 at
room temperature.\textsuperscript{189} SBT belongs to the family of Aurivillius compounds with a general formula \((\text{Bi}_2\text{O}_2)^{2+}(A_{m-1}B_{m}\text{O}_{3m+1})^{2-}\), consisting of perovskite units sandwiched between bismuth oxide layers, where \(A\) is Na, Sr, Ca, Ba, Pb, or Bi and \(B\) is Ti, Ta, or Nb, and \(m\) can be an integer or \(1/2\) integer, with \(m=2\) for SBT. The crystal structure of SBT is shown in Figure 15. The \(A\) ion, \(\text{Sr}^{2+}\), is surrounded by 12 oxygen ions as in the perovskite structure, and the \(B\) ion, \(\text{Ta}^{5+}\), is octahedrally coordinated by 6 oxygen ions. At three of the four distinct oxygen sites, \(O(1)\) and \(O(2)\) are bonded to two Ta ions, as in perovskites, while \(O(3)\) is bonded to one Ta. Bi and \(O(4)\) form a rippled BiO layer in which Bi ions lie alternatively above and below the \(O(4)\) plane. The Bi sites are asymmetric, forming four short bonds to \(O(4)\) sites and four longer bonds to \(O(3)\) sites. The room-temperature structure is orthorhombic, and the primitive cell contains 28 atoms. The lattice parameters of the conventional unit cell are \(a=5.531\ \text{Å}, b=5.534\ \text{Å},\) and \(c=24.984\ \text{Å}\.\)
Figure 15 Crystal structure of SrBi$_2$Ta$_2$O$_9$ (SBT).

As a result of the layered structure of SBT, its properties exhibit a high degree of anisotropy. Figure 16a shows a temperature dependence of the relative permittivity measured upon cooling in the $ab$ plane (along the [110] direction) and along the $c$ axis of single-crystal SBT. In both cases, the maximum of dielectric permittivity corresponding to the ferro–paraelectric phase transition is clearly observed at $T_C = 355 \degree C$, in agreement with other reports. The maximum permittivity of SBT in the $ab$ plane ($\sim 1500$) is about an order of magnitude greater than that along the $c$ axis ($\sim 135$), consistent with the results obtained by Irie et al. The anisotropy of dielectric permittivity, i.e., the ratio between the average permittivity in the $ab$ plane and along $c$ axis is about 10 at $T_C$ and decreases to $\sim 2$ at room temperature. The values of the permittivity in the $ab$ plane of single crystal SBT exceed significantly those of bulk ceramics. Figure 16b compares the temperature behavior of the dielectric losses ($\tan\delta$) measured at 1 MHz in the $ab$ plane and along the $c$ axis. The losses at low temperatures are essentially higher in the $ab$ plane, which is indicative of a large contribution from domain wall motion. The $P\text{--}\varepsilon$ hysteresis loops measured both along the $c$ axis and in the $ab$ plane (parallel to the [110] direction) of single-crystal SBT are shown in Figure 17. The hysteresis loop for the $ab$ plane is well-saturated, whereas only a linear $P\text{--}\varepsilon$ behavior with vanishing remanent polarization is observed for measurements along the $c$ axis due to the anisotropy of single-crystal SBT and the fact that the $P_S$ vector in the SBT structure lies entirely in the $ab$ plane and no polarization can be obtained perpendicular to the bismuth oxide layer.
Figure 16 Temperature dependence of the (a) dielectric permittivity and (b) dielectric losses at 1 MHz along the [110] (ab-plane) and the [001] (c-axis) directions in the SrBi$_2$Ta$_2$O$_9$ single crystal. Reprinted with permission Ref. 235.

Figure 17 $P-E$ hysteresis loops along the [110] (ab-plane) and the [001] (c-axis) directions in the SrBi$_2$Ta$_2$O$_9$ single crystal. Reprinted with permission Ref. 235.
The fatigue-free behavior of SBT is considered to be due to the Bi-containing layered perovskite structure with double layers of Ta–O octahedra sandwiched between (Bi₂O₂)²⁺ layers. Since the (Bi₂O₂)²⁺ layers have net electrical charge, their positioning in the lattice is self-regulated to compensate for space charge.²⁴¹

3.2.5 Bi₄Ti₃O₁₂ (BIT)

Due to its small coercive field²⁴² and fatigue-free behavior,²⁴³ bismuth titanate Bi₄Ti₃O₁₂ (BIT) is another lead-free candidate for FeRAM applications. The Curie temperature of BIT is 675 °C,²⁴⁴ which makes it a suitable candidate for high-temperature piezoelectric devices. As SBT, BIT belongs to the family of the Aurivillius compounds.²³⁴ The crystal structure of BIT consists of (Bi₂O₂)²⁺ sheets alternating with (Bi₂Ti₃O₁₀)²⁻ layers along the pseudotetragonal c-axis, as shown in Figure 18.²⁴⁴ In the Bi₂Ti₃O₁₀ units, Ti ions are enclosed by oxygen octahedra, which are linked through corners forming the O-Ti-O linear chains. Bi ions occupy the spaces in the framework of TiO₆ octahedra. The Bi₂Ti₃O₁₀ units exhibit a remarkable similarity to the perovskite structure. As established by Aurivillius,²³⁴ BIT has orthorhombic symmetry with room-temperature lattice parameters are \(a=5.410\), \(b=5.448\), and \(c=32.84\ \text{Å}\). Similar to SBT, BIT exhibits highly anisotropic properties due to the layered structure, with maximum electrical conductivity in the same plane as polarization.²⁴⁵

It is interesting that BIT shows relatively worse fatigue properties.²⁴⁶ although it has the layered perovskite structure with (Bi₂O₂)²⁺ layers similar to that of SBT, The origin of the fatigue behavior of BIT and SBT thin films was studied by Park et al.²⁴⁷,²⁴⁸
They concluded that oxygen ions near the Bi ions are less stable than those near Sr ions due to the volatility of Bi, and therefore oxygen vacancies in SBT are located only in the \((\text{Bi}_2\text{O}_2)^{2+}\) layers. In BIT, however, oxygen vacancies can be induced both in the \((\text{Bi}_2\text{O}_2)^{2+}\) layers and in the \(\text{TiO}_6\) octahedra layers. Thus, it was deduced that the difference in stability of the metal–oxygen octahedra is responsible for different fatigue behaviors of SBT and BIT. Therefore, the fatigue characteristics of BIT could be improved by substituting of Bi ions near the Ti–O octahedra with other elements which make oxygen ions stable. Doping of \(\text{Bi}_4\text{Ti}_3\text{O}_{12}\) with La or Nd, substituting into the Bi site yields the materials named bismuth lanthanum titanate \((\text{Bi}_{4-x}\text{La}_x\text{Ti}_3\text{O}_{12}, \text{abbreviated as BLT})\) and bismuth neodymium titanate \((\text{Bi}_{4-x}\text{Nd}_x\text{Ti}_3\text{O}_{12}, \text{abbreviated as BNT})\). This doping allows one to improve fatigue characteristics, increase the remanent polarization, and decrease the process temperature of the material, albeit at the expense of an increased coercive field.\(^{247}\) Piezoelectric properties of BIT in relation to their structural and microstructural features are well described in review,\(^{249}\) and comparison of ferroelectric properties of PZT and BIT epitaxial thin films from the standpoint of their FeRAM applications can be found in Ref. 243.
Figure 18 One half of the pseudotetragonal unit cell of Bi_4Ti_3O_12. A denotes the perovskite layer (Bi_2Ti_3O_10)_2^−, C denotes (Bi_2O_2)^{2+} layers, and B denotes a unit cell of hypothetical perovskite structure BiTiO_3. Patterned after permission Ref. 244. We can say that it is patterned after Ref. 244.

3.3 Growth of ferroelectric thin films

Ferroelectric films with highly oriented microstructures are preferable for many applications such as high density FeRAMs,\textsuperscript{250, 251} electro-optic or acousto-optic waveguide devices,\textsuperscript{252, 253} and SAW filters.\textsuperscript{254} The fabrication of high-quality single-crystal epitaxial films with good ferroelectric properties also makes possible down scaling of ferroelectric device dimensions and integration of ferroelectric oxides with
semiconductor technologies. A great number of research efforts on the growth of high quality ferroelectric thin films have been undertaken using a variety of deposition techniques including rf magnetron sputtering, pulsed laser deposition (PLD), molecular beam epitaxy (MBE), metal-organic chemical vapor deposition (MOCVD), hydrothermal synthesis, and chemical solution deposition (CSD and also sol-gel). While the sol-gel technique is employed in low-density FeRAM applications, MOCVD (at least based on the results obtained so far) is a preferred method for high-density FeRAM applications due to its high deposition rate, uniformity, and high degree of step coverage over the complex device topographies of ultra-large scale integrated (ULSI) circuits. MBE has been a workhorse of epitaxial growth of various compound semiconductors such as SiGe, III-V, and II-VI compounds, at least in research and development phases, due to low defect density and precise control of composition in grown films. However, MBE is just beginning to be considered for attaining ferroelectric oxides, while other physical vapor deposition techniques, such as PLD and sputtering have been extensively employed for ferroelectric oxide growth. In all these growth methods, the emphasis is placed on the interface control to promote high quality film growth and on identification of optimum deposition parameters. In this vein, various deposition techniques for the growth of ferroelectric thin films will be briefly discussed.

3.3.1 Deposition of ferroelectric films by sol-gel technique

The chemical solution deposition (CSD) or sol-gel technique has been extensively used to synthesize a wide range of ferroelectric oxides because of its numerous advantages, including simplicity, low cost, excellent thickness...
and compositional control, short fabrication cycle, and uniformity over large areas. A conventional sol–gel process includes the preparation of stable solution of metal oxide precursors in a suitable solvent with other chemical additives to control the solution properties. This is an important step for sol–gel processing, and many complicated chemical reactions such as hydrolysis, condensation, and chelation proceed during the solution preparation. The solution is partially hydrolyzed to form a stable sol, and then the sol is polymerized to form a gel. Afterwards, it is dried and fired to remove the organic components and form an oxide powder, which can be sintered to make ceramics. To fabricate thin films, the sol-gel solution is spin-coated on a flat substrate, and then the resulting film undergoes a low-temperature heat treatment (pyrolysis) to remove organic components. Most organic materials from precursor solutions are decomposed and removed from the films during the pyrolysis step. The thickness of the deposited layer is usually very low, of the order 50 nm, and preparation of films with thicknesses of 0.5-1 μm requires repeated deposition steps. Finally, the as-pyroli zed amorphous film is subjected to high-temperature annealing to form a dense crystalline layer of the desired phase composition and thickness. More information about precursor characteristics as well as various chemical, physical, and technological aspects of the sol-gel process can be found in Refs. 265,266,267,268,269,270. Structural and, therefore, physical properties of sol-gel films depend strongly on such processing conditions as temperature of pyrolysis and final heat-treatment, heat treatment atmosphere and duration, solution composition, and seeding layer.271,272,273,274,275,276,277,278,279

It should be mentioned that although the sol-gel technique is studied and successfully used for many years, it still has some significant drawbacks. One of them is
the formation of cracks during the drying process of a sol-gel film. As the solvent evaporates from the film, its volume decreases and the film shrinks, which results in biaxial tensile stress relieved by developing cracks.\textsuperscript{280,281} Delamination of the film due to the difference in thermal expansion coefficient between a film and a bottom electrode is one more unresolved problem.\textsuperscript{281} Among other limitations of this technique are poor step coverage and residual organic impurities in the films.\textsuperscript{282}

In the case of perovskite-type ferroelectrics, such as PZT, one of the major drawbacks of the sol-gel technique is that it does not yield the desired perovskite phase directly. The formation of perovskite phase upon final annealing is preceded by the undesirable nonferroelectric pyrochlore phase. It was found that distribution of the nearest neighbor and next nearest neighbor ions in the pyrochlore phase is similar to those in the amorphous phase.\textsuperscript{271} Therefore, although perovskite is the thermodynamically stable phase in the temperature range used in sol-gel fabrication, the transformation from amorphous to pyrochlore phase is kinetically more favorable than a straight transformation to the perovskite phase.

### 3.3.2 Deposition of Ferroelectric Films by Hydrothermal Method

In hydrothermal technique, chemical reactions in aqueous solutions are used to synthesize ferroelectric materials in both powder\textsuperscript{283,284,285,286,287,288,289,290,291,292,293,294} and thin film form\textsuperscript{295,296,297,298,299,300,301,302,303,304,305,306}. The main advantage of the hydrothermal technique is low synthesis temperature (typically 100-200°C) and environmentally friendly processing conditions. Due to the low process temperature, such problems as cracking due to residual thermal stresses and interdiffusion and chemical reaction between the film and the substrate are suppressed. Other advantages of this
technique are automatically aligned polarization, possibility of deposition on non-flat surfaces and preparation of very thick films (up to tens of microns) at a relatively low cost. A drawback of this technique is that monitoring of the growth process is impossible and concentrations of precursors are not controlled during the synthesis. It should be mentioned, however, that Ohba et al.\textsuperscript{307} designed a continuous-supply autoclave system, which allowed them to control the chemical composition of the solution during the reaction phase.

### 3.3.3 Deposition of ferroelectric films by sputtering

The sputtering technique is widely used for the deposition of ferroelectric thin films\textsuperscript{308,309,310,311,312,313,314,315,316,317,318,319,320,321,322} for its relatively simple fabrication processes, compatibility with standard device fabrication technology, high deposition rates, uniformity of film thickness and composition over a large area, and low concentration of residual impurities. As for the disadvantages, we should mention poor step coverage and somewhat inferior quality as well as the difficulty in composition control of compounds containing volatile elements, such as Pb and Bi. To compensate for the Pb or Bi loss, targets with excess Pb or Bi content or multiple targets are typically used.\textsuperscript{318,323,324,325,326} Depending on the type of targets, two types of sputtering methods – dc and rf sputtering – can be applied for ferroelectric film deposition. When an insulating ceramic target is used as a source of material, rf magnetron sputtering is employed. The dc sputtering is utilized for deposition from metallic (conductive) targets. The growth is typically carried out in the deposition chamber with a mixed O$_2$ + Ar atmosphere. O$_2$ acts as the reactive gas and Ar serves to enhance sputtering from the target. To grow doped
films, an appropriate dopant element is added during the target preparation. Structural and ferroelectric properties, growth rate, phase composition, and stoichiometry of the grown films depend on a number of sputtering parameters, among which are substrate temperature,\textsuperscript{318,319} gas pressure and composition,\textsuperscript{315,317,320,321,322} sputter power,\textsuperscript{317,322} target-to-substrate distance, and target composition.\textsuperscript{314}

\subsection*{3.3.4 Pulsed laser deposition of ferroelectric films}

PLD has been regarded as one of the most suitable methods for most oxide thin film growth. It is widely used for ferroelectric film growth.\textsuperscript{327,328,329,330,331,332,333,334,335,336,337,338,339,340} Physical processes in PLD are very complex and interrelated, and depend on the laser pulse parameters and the properties of the target material. As in the case of sputtering, PLD uses composite ceramic targets as source material for growth. Unlike sputtering, however, short and intense laser (generally excimer) pulses are used to evaporate and ablate the target material. An intense laser stream passes through an optical window of a vacuum deposition chamber and is focused onto a target where it is partially absorbed. As a result, a supersonic jet of plume is generated and directed normal to the target surface. The plume expands away from the target with a strong forward directed velocity distribution of different particles. Significant material removal in the form of a plume occurs above a certain power density. The threshold power density needed to produce such a plume depends on the target material, its morphology, and the laser pulse wavelength and duration. Material from the plume is then re-condensed on the substrate, where the film growth occurs. As in the case of sputtering, targets with excess Pb or Bi content are typically used to compensate for
the loss of the volatile components (Pb or Bi) during growth.\textsuperscript{330,334,335} The growth process may be supplemented by a passive or reactive gas or ion source, which may affect the ablation plume species in the gas phase or the surface reaction, which is referred to as reactive PLD.

Laser ablation for thin film growth has many advantages compared to other methods. In particular, the energy source (laser) is outside the deposition chamber which allows much greater flexibility in materials used and geometrical arrangements; almost any kind of condensed matter material can be ablated; film growth rates may be controlled to any desired value because of the pulsed nature of the laser beam; the evaporating source material is localized only where the laser beam is incident; under optimal conditions the ratios of the elemental components of the bulk and film are the same regardless of the chemical complexity of the systems. At the same time, PLD also has some drawbacks: production of macroscopic particles during the ablation process, defects caused in the growing film through bombardment by high kinetic energy particles, and inhomogeneous flux and angular energy distributions within the ablation plume, which makes this technique not easily adaptable to for large-area substrates and hence for industrial production.

Numerous deposition parameters - ambient gas pressure, substrate type and temperature, substrate-to-target distance and target-substrate geometry, target composition, laser spot size, fluence, wavelength, repetition rate - have a pronounced effect on the deposition rate, stoichiometry, phase composition, and crystalline quality of ferroelectric films.\textsuperscript{327,333,334,336,337,338,339,340}
3.3.5 Metal-organic chemical vapor deposition of ferroelectric films

MOCVD is a well-established method based on decomposition of gaseous precursors on a hot substrate to form a film of desired composition. MOCVD is one of the most promising methods for FeRAM applications because of its high deposition rate, high crystal quality of the films, good step coverage and conformal deposition on three-dimensional surfaces, uniformity of film composition and thickness over a large area, and compatibility with semiconductor technologies. In addition, reevaporation of highly volatile elements, such as Pb and Bi, which are constituents of some ferroelectric materials (PZT, SBT, BIT), can be prevented owing to the relatively high gas pressure. Film composition can be easily controlled by varying the molar ratio of the precursors fed into the growth chamber. One of the key advantages of MOCVD growth of ferroelectric films for FeRAM applications is the possibility to decrease the growth temperature down to 370-570 °C, which is essential to prevent interdiffusion between ferroelectric thin films and electrodes. For example, SBT and PZT films having good ferroelectricity were obtained at 415 and 570 °C, respectively. The possibility to decrease the growth temperature has been achieved due to a pulsed MOCVD process, wherein short growth periods are interspersed with intervals of no precursor supply. This effect was explained by the acceleration of decomposition of source gases and migration of adsorbed species as well as by reevaporation of the excess Pb and Bi from the surface during the interval time. In the case of PZT growth, it has been also demonstrated that PbTiO₃ seeds are very useful not only to improve the PZT crystal quality and surface morphology, but also to decrease the epitaxial growth temperature. The films grown on PbTiO₃, which has a structure
similar to that of perovskite PZT and the relatively small lattice mismatch, exhibit better crystallinity even at lower substrate temperatures due to the templating effect. Various aspects of MOCVD growth of ferroelectric films, including consideration of reactors and precursors, are reviewed in details in Refs. 266,327,351,352,353,354,355

3.3.6 Molecular beam epitaxy of ferroelectric films

MBE played a pivotal role in epitaxial growth of various compound semiconductors such as SiGe, III-V, and II-VI compound due to its precise control over growth parameters and composition of grown films. However, the growth of oxides by MBE is a very difficult task, because of oxidation of materials in effusion cells, which necessitates use of oxygen tolerant materials for MBE component fabrication such as effusion cells and substrate heater. Therefore, MBE has not yet been widely applied to the growth of ferroelectric oxides unlike the other growth techniques discussed earlier. In spite of the foregoing shortcomings, there have been some reports on epitaxial growth of ferroelectric oxides using MBE including LiNbO3,356,357 LiTaO3,358 BaTiO3,359,360,361,362 (Ba, Sr)TiO3,363,364 Bi4Ti3O12,365,366 and PbTiO3.367,368,369 Very recently the growth of high quality PZT films on SrTiO3 substrates has been reported.370,371

In conclusion, it should be mentioned that structural, piezoelectric, dielectric, and ferroelectric properties as well as fatigue, retention, and imprint characteristics of ferroelectric thin films can differ substantially from those of bulk ceramic samples.372,373,374,375,376,377,378 The growth method applied and a myriad of growth parameters determine stoichiometry, phase composition, and crystalline quality of the
layers, and, therefore, have a strong influence on their ferroelectric characteristics. Domain/grain structure, crystallographic orientation, defects, strain, substrate clamping effect, film thickness, film/substrate interface, and composition are critically important factors affecting the film properties. More detailed discussion of the factors affecting ferroelectric thin film characteristics can be found in reviews \(^{327,379,380,381}\) and references therein.

### 3.4 Applications of ferroelectric oxides

Ferroelectrics are of great interest for a wide range of applications. Pyroelectric properties of ferroelectric thin films are used for high sensitivity IR detectors. Piezoelectric thin films have also been integrated into MEMS devices such as micro-scale accelerometers, displacement transducers, and actuators. Excellent piezoelectric properties of perovskite oxides can be exploited in SAW devices used as filters, phase shifters, and phase delay lines. Currently, typical piezoelectric materials for SAW filters are single-crystal LiNbO\(_3\), LiTaO\(_3\), AlN, and ZnO, which have SAW phase velocities in the range of 2500–6000 m/s and resulting device central frequencies are in the GHz range. Reports on SAW properties or devices made of perovskite ferroelectric thin films are relatively few in number,\(^ {382,383,384,385}\) although PZT at its morphotropic phase boundary may exhibit a high electromechanical coupling coefficient. As for sensors, it should be noted that most of them operate in complex environments, where various parameters such as temperature, pressure, humidity, radiation, gas concentration, and so on, change simultaneously. In this vein, novel sensor designs capable of providing the same output and/or linear characteristics as functions of a variety of environmental perturbations, i.e.
multifunctional sensors, are in high demand. So far, only a limited number of reports are available on humidity and temperature sensors.\textsuperscript{386,387,388} For example, thick films of Ba_{1-x}Sr_{x}TiO_{3} exhibit a change in the dielectric constant in response to temperature variations, while the electrical conductivity of Ba_{1-x}Sr_{x}TiO_{3} is a function of humidity. Hence, the temperature and humidity can be simultaneously detected by measuring the film capacitance and the film resistance, respectively, without incurring crosstalk. The response times of the thick-film sensors to humidity and temperature are 30 seconds and 60 seconds, respectively.\textsuperscript{387}

Progress has been made also in the application of ferroelectric thin films in the field of high-frequency devices and optical switches for integrated optical systems. Today, LiNbO_{3} single crystals are the most widely used electro-optic material for telecommunication devices. However, LiNbO_{3} has some drawbacks, such as low electro-optic effect and strong temperature dependence. Perovskite oxides (Pb,La)(Zr,Ti)O_{3} (PLZT) and Pb(Mg_{1/3}Nb_{2/3})O_{3}-PbTiO_{3} (PMN-PT) feature high electro-optic effect, good transparency, ruggedness, and low cost,\textsuperscript{389} which makes them good candidates for electro-optic devices.\textsuperscript{390,391,392} Such materials as Pb(Zr,Ti)O_{3},\textsuperscript{393} Sr_{1-x}Ba_{x}Nb_{2}O_{6} (SBN),\textsuperscript{395,396} and BaTiO_{3}\textsuperscript{397} also can be used for electro-optic applications. For example, using spectroscopic ellipsometry Kang et al.\textsuperscript{393} observed a large linear electro-optic effect in PZT films grown epitaxially on Nb-doped SrTiO_{3}(001) substrates by RF magnetron sputtering. However, the relative degree of activities in those fields has not been as extensive as those in the case of ferroelectric applications.

Ferroelectric oxides have been extensively studied also for tunable microwave passive components, such as resonators, filters, and phase shifters. Among ferroelectric
materials, BST is the most promising candidate as a medium for tunable microwave passive components due to its large dielectric tunability, i.e., the large change in dielectric constant with applied voltage, and low dielectric loss at microwave frequencies.\textsuperscript{221, 398} The relative tunability \( n \) is defined as the relative change of the permittivity between zero bias and bias in a field \( E \) with respect to the zero-bias value:\textsuperscript{221}

\[
\frac{n = \varepsilon(0) - \varepsilon(E)}{\varepsilon(0)}.
\]

Equation 5

The loss tangent, \( \tan \delta \), is given by the ratio of the imaginary \( \varepsilon'' \) and real \( \varepsilon' \) parts of the permittivity:

\[
\tan \delta(E) = \frac{\varepsilon'(E)}{\varepsilon''(E)}.
\]

Equation 6

Both the tunability and the dielectric constant peak near the ferroelectric Curie temperature. The composition dependence of \( T_C \) (see Figure 12) makes possible for one to tailor the dielectric properties of BST by tuning its composition. Unfortunately, the dielectric-loss tangent is also large just below the Curie temperature. Therefore, a tradeoff between a high dielectric tunability and large dielectric loss tangent is required.

Most of studies aimed at microwave applications of BST are focused on thin films because of their low cost, low leakage current, and possible integration with standard semiconductor technologies (see Ref. 221 and references therein). As compared to the bulk material, strain in BST thin films is an additional factor affecting the Curie temperature and the dielectric properties.\textsuperscript{399, 400, 401, 402} Therefore, tailoring the strain provides an alternative approach (referred to as strain engineering) to varying the barium-to-strontium ratio. Compressive or tensile strain in BST films was found to shift the Curie
temperature, thus affecting the dielectric constant and tunability values.\textsuperscript{399,400} Thermal stability of the dielectric properties is another critical characteristic of a material for tunable microwave devices. The permittivity of BST is very sensitive to temperature near the ferroelectric transition temperature, which is a potential drawback from the standpoint of device applications, because the strong temperature dependence of $\varepsilon$ leads to the change in device characteristics as the temperature changes. As a solution of this problem, compositionally graded BST films have been proposed.\textsuperscript{403,404,405,406} A compositionally graded film is composed of several layers with different compositions and thus different ferroelectric transition temperatures. Such compositionally graded films have been shown to have weak temperature dependence and high permittivity and tunability.\textsuperscript{403,404,405,406} It should be mentioned that a weak temperature dependence of permittivity was also observed for BST films under compressive strain.\textsuperscript{399,400}

As mentioned already, the increased interest in ferroelectric oxides stems also from the fact they are considered to be good candidates for non-volatile FeRAM devices. Various perovskite-structure materials as SrBi$_2$Ta$_2$O$_9$ (SBT), Ba$_x$Sr$_{1-x}$TiO$_3$ (BST), Bi$_4$Ti$_3$O$_{12}$ (BIT), Bi$_{4-x}$La$_x$Ti$_3$O$_{12}$ (BLT), BaMgF$_4$, Pb$_5$Ge$_3$O$_{11}$, and Pb(Zr,Ti)O$_3$ (PZT) have been considered as candidates for FeRAM, among which SBT and PZT are considered to be most suitable materials for FeRAM development. PZT exhibits superior ferroelectric properties such as higher dielectric constants, lower coercive field, and higher Curie temperature as compared to BST. However, PZT suffers from the fatigue problem which proved to be somewhat intractable, at least up to now. Typically, Pt/PZT/PT capacitors lose more than 50% of their polarization after $10^9$-$10^{10}$ cycles which is not acceptable for IC technology while a fatigue lifetime more that $10^{14}$ cycles is
considered acceptable for commercial applications. Fatigue properties associated with PZT have been improved significantly by using conductive oxide electrodes, albeit further improvements are still called for.

![Circuit configuration of ferroelectric random access memories. (a) capacitor type (destructive readout type) and (b) MFSFET type (nondestructive readout type).](image)

There are two types of memory cell structures in FeRAMs. A cell of the first type consists of a transistor (MOSFET) and a ferroelectric capacitor (1T/1C structure), as shown in Figure 19a. A memory cell of the second type includes one transistor and a metal-ferroelectric-semiconductor field effect transistor (MFSFET, or FeFET) instead of the ferroelectric capacitor (Figure 19b). FeFET is essentially a conventional FET with a gate dielectric replaced by a thin ferroelectric layer. In this device, the channel conductance is regulated by the polarization state of the ferroelectric, so that when “0” or “1” data are written in the ferroelectric film as the direction of polarization, they can be read as a difference of the drain current of the FET and does not require switching of the
polarization in order to read the memory cell. This feature is called non-destructive readout.

The structure of the capacitor-type cell shown in Figure 19a is essentially the same as that of DRAM, except for a plate line. In the “write” operation, the polarity of the ferroelectric capacitor is directed either upward or downward by applying a positive or negative voltage pulse between the bit and plate lines and by switching-on the FET in the cell. While in the “read” operation, a voltage pulse to align the polarization upward, for example, is given to a selected cell and the response current of the capacitor is measured. In this operation, if the initial polarization of the ferroelectric film is downward, the polarity reversal current flows as well as the usual displacement current. Since the stored data are destroyed through this operation, it is necessary to rewrite the data after each “read” operation. The fabrication process of this type of FeRAM is, however, easier than that of the FET-type FeRAM, and all products so far commercialized belong to this type. At present, a prototype FeRAM device with a capacity of 128 Mbits has been recently presented by Toshiba. Thorough discussion on current status and future perspectives of nonvolatile ferroelectric memory can be found in Refs. 379,351,414,415,416,417.

More detailed considerations of ferroelectric materials can be found in several excellent reviews. Shaw et al. reviewed the size effects in ferroelectric materials. Technology of ferroelectric ceramics has been the topic of discussion by Haertling. Reports by Ishwara and Scott are devoted to problems in ferroelectric FET memory developments. Setter et al. extensively discussed properties and applications of ferroelectric thin films. Review by Izyumskaya et al. encompasses
film growth technology, characterization, processing, and device fabrication with regard to Pb(Zr,Ti)O₃, while the treatise by Maeder et al.²⁴⁹ is devoted to Pb-free piezoelectric materials.

4 Magnetic Oxides

For practical device applications, magnetic materials obviously should exhibit a Curie point above room temperature. A variety of oxides, including mixed-valence manganites, diluted magnetic oxides, spinels, ferrites, and double perovskites have been studied for high Curie temperature ferromagnetism. In this section, we will focus on diluted magnetic oxides and mixed-valence manganese oxides of the general formula Re₁₋ₓAₓMnO₃ (Re = trivalent rare earth element, A = divalent alkaline earth element), which are considered as magnetic materials for potential spintronic and magnetic memory applications.

4.1 Diluted magnetic oxides

Diluted magnetic oxides (DMOs) are transparent, wide-band-gap materials in which a small fraction of the host cations is substituted with magnetic ions. Transition metals (TM) with partially filled d states (Sc, Ti, V, Cr, Mn, Fe, Co, Ni as well as Cu which has a completely filled d shell, but acts as magnetic impurity when in Cu²⁺ charge state) and rare earth elements with partially filled f states (Eu, Gd, Er) can be used as magnetic ions in DMOs. The concept is expanded to include diluted magnetic semiconductors (DMS), such as (Ga,Mn)As and TM-doped GaN, ZnSe, ZnS, ZnTe, CdTe, CdSe, CdS. These materials have attracted considerable attention due to their
potential spintronic applications, where the spin of carriers is exploited along with their charge. For practical applications in spintronics devices, the DMO materials must exhibit a Curie temperature above room temperature, which is naturally deemed to be the bottleneck issue.

4.1.1 Experimental findings

Intensive search for diluted magnetic semiconductors, including dilute magnetic oxides, showing room-temperature or above ferromagnetism started after 2000, when Dietl et al.\textsuperscript{22} and Sato and Katayama-Yoshida\textsuperscript{23} predicted theoretically that ZnO could exhibit ferromagnetism above room temperature upon doping with transition elements such as Mn, V, Cr, Fe, Co and Ni. In 2001, Matsumoto et al.\textsuperscript{24} reported on the discovery of ferromagnetism in the Co-doped anatase TiO\textsubscript{2} thin films. Later, high-temperature ferromagnetism was observed for various oxides, including TiO\textsubscript{2} doped with Co,\textsuperscript{24,424} Fe,\textsuperscript{426,428,429} V,\textsuperscript{426,430} Cr,\textsuperscript{426,431} Ni,\textsuperscript{426,432} Mn,\textsuperscript{433} and Cu;\textsuperscript{434} ZnO doped with Cr,\textsuperscript{435,436,437} V,\textsuperscript{438,439,440} Mn,\textsuperscript{441,442,443} Co,\textsuperscript{440,442,444,445,446} Ni,\textsuperscript{440,447,448} Ti,\textsuperscript{440} Fe,\textsuperscript{440,449} Sc,\textsuperscript{440} Cu,\textsuperscript{450,451} and Fe+Cu;\textsuperscript{452} SnO\textsubscript{2} doped with Co,\textsuperscript{453,454} Fe,\textsuperscript{454,455,456} Cr,\textsuperscript{454,457} Ni,\textsuperscript{435,454,458} Mn,\textsuperscript{454} and V ;\textsuperscript{459} In\textsubscript{2}O\textsubscript{3} doped with Ni,\textsuperscript{460} Cr,\textsuperscript{461} Fe+Mn,\textsuperscript{462} Fe+Cu,\textsuperscript{463,464,465,466,467} and Fe+Cr;\textsuperscript{468} (In,Sn)\textsubscript{2}O\textsubscript{3} (ITO) doped with Mn,\textsuperscript{469} Cr,\textsuperscript{470} Ni,\textsuperscript{460} and Cu+Fe;\textsuperscript{463} CeO\textsubscript{2} doped with Co;\textsuperscript{471} and surprisingly in oxides doped with non-magnetic impurities, such as C-doped ZnO\textsuperscript{472} as well as in undoped HfO\textsubscript{2},\textsuperscript{473,474,475} TiO\textsubscript{2},\textsuperscript{475,476,477} and In\textsubscript{2}O\textsubscript{3}.\textsuperscript{475} Table 3 lists magnetic and transport properties of various DMOs.

Despite the large number of studies in this field, the origin of ferromagnetism in DMOs still remains somewhat unclear. First of all, observed magnetic properties could in fact be due to, at least in some cases, the formation of metallic clusters (Fe, Co, Mn) or
magnetic secondary phases and precipitates, such as CoO, Co$_3$O$_4$, CuO, FeO, Fe$_3$O$_4$, (Zn, Fe)$_3$O$_4$, MnO, MnO$_2$, Mn$_2$O$_3$, in the DMO matrix. Moreover, trace amounts of magnetic contamination coming from stainless steel tools, such as tweezers and substrate holders, also can provide a sufficiently large signal detectible by superconducting quantum interference devices (SQUIDs) and magnetometers. For example, Abraham et al. reported that they observed ferromagnetism only in HfO$_2$ samples handled with stainless steel tweezers; therefore, ferromagnetism in this oxide is not intrinsic, but is related to sample contamination. It should be also noted that DMOs frequently exhibit ferromagnetic properties when prepared in the form of poor-crystalized thin films or nanoparticles, while their bulk counterparts or well-crystallized films usually show no evidence of ferromagnetism. In addition, reported properties of DMOs depend strongly on the preparation technique and growth conditions, and they significantly vary from research group to group, which makes the interpretation of experimental data extremely complicated.

4.1.2 The origin of ferromagnetism in DMOs

The mechanism of intrinsic ferromagnetic in DMOs is a matter of debate. Early attempts to explain the magnetic behavior of DMSs are based on carrier-mediated mechanisms implying that moments of magnetic ions are coupled via double-exchange and Ruderman-Kittel-Kasuya-Yoshida (RKKY) type interactions. In the double exchange mechanism originally proposed by Zener, magnetic ions in different charge states couple ferromagnetically by virtual hopping of an ‘extra’ electron from one ion to the other through interaction with $p$-orbitals.
Section 4.2.1, we will consider the double-exchange mechanism in more details. The main idea behind the RKKY interaction is the exchange coupling between magnetic ions and free electrons. An electron is magnetized in the vicinity of a magnetic ion, with the polarization decaying with distance from the magnetic ion in an oscillatory fashion. This oscillation causes an indirect superexchange interaction (RKKY interaction) between the two magnetic ions on the nearest or the next nearest magnetic neighbor sites. This coupling may result in a parallel (ferromagnetic) or an anti-parallel (antiferromagnetic) setting of the moments depending on the separation between the interacting atoms. The mean-field Zener model proposed by Dietl et al.\textsuperscript{22} is based on the original model of Zener and the RKKY interaction. As compared to the RKKY interaction, the mean-field Zener model takes into account the anisotropy of the carrier-mediated exchange interaction associated with the spin-orbit coupling in the host material. In the process, it reveals the important effect of the spin-orbit coupling in the valence band in determining the magnitude of the $T_C$ and the direction of the easy axis in $p$-type ferromagnetic semiconductors. Based on this model, it was predicted that TM-doped $p$-type ZnO is one of the most promising candidates for ferromagnetic DMS with a high Curie temperature.\textsuperscript{22} However, this prediction has been made assuming hole concentrations of above $10^{20}$ cm$^{-3}$, which in fact may never be attainable. Based on first principles calculations of the electronic structures of TM-doped ZnO, Sato and Katayama-Yoshida\textsuperscript{23,495} have suggested that the ferromagnetism in DMSs is a consequence of a competition between the ferromagnetic double-exchange interaction and the antiferromagnetic super-exchange interactions, and the magnetic properties of DMS materials can be controlled by changing the carrier (electrons or holes) density.
The mechanisms based on carrier-mediated interactions, such as RKKY and double-exchange, however, require high concentrations of free carriers, electrons or holes, which is not always the case in DMOs. In addition, ferromagnetic order in the oxides doped with only a few percents of TM is hard to explain in terms of superexchange or double exchange interaction, since the fraction of TM ions are far below the percolation threshold, $x_p$, associated with nearest-neighbour cation coupling. The value of $x_p$ is $\sim 2/Z$, where $Z$ is the cation coordination number. For oxides, $Z = 6$ or 8, thus $x_p$ is typically 25-30%. Coey et al. have developed a theoretical model which is applicable to low-doped (few percent) and insulating DMOs. The model suggests that ferromagnetic exchange in TM-doped oxides is mediated by localized donor electrons in the impurity band, which couple with $3d$ moments of TM ions to form bound magnetic polarons (BMPs). An electron associated with a donor defect (oxygen vacancy for example) is confined in a hydrogenic orbital of radius $r_\text{H} = \varepsilon(m/m^*)a_0$, where $\varepsilon$ is the high-frequency dielectric constant, $m$ is the electron mass, $m^*$ is the effective mass of the donor electrons, and $a_0$ is the Bohr radius. As the defect concentration increases, the $1s$ orbitals overlap to form an impurity band. The hydrogenic electrons associated with defects interact with TM ions within their orbits and align dopant spins, which results in ferromagnetic exchange coupling between the ions, as illustrated in Figure 20. As the defect density increases, the hydrogenic orbitals overlap, and, as the polaron percolation threshold is reached, the material becomes ferromagnetic. High Curie temperatures were explained by hybridization and charge transfer from a donor-derived impurity band to unoccupied $3d$ states of TM ions at the Fermi level.
As mentioned above, ferromagnetism was observed also in some oxides containing no impurity ions with partially filled $d$ or $f$ shells.\textsuperscript{434,440,472,473,474,475,476,477} The origin of this phenomenon, which has received the name d\textsuperscript{0} ferromagnetism,\textsuperscript{501} is most likely related to lattice defects,\textsuperscript{473,501,502} leaving aside the possibility of sample contamination.\textsuperscript{483,484,485,486,487} To account for the mysterious d\textsuperscript{0} ferromagnetism, Coey et al.\textsuperscript{498,503,504} have developed a general model of charge-transfer ferromagnetism, which explains also the ferromagnetic behavior of TM-doped DMOs. The model suggests that the ferromagnetic order in MDOs is not due to the spins of 3$d$ dopant electrons, but is related to itinerant electrons associated with structural defects (point or planar defects distributed throughout a film or defects at surfaces and interfaces). These defects create
states in the band gap to form an impurity band, which need not even be occupied, but must be close to the Fermi level. The density of states in the tight-binding model depends on the number of nearest neighbors. This number is reduced at the surface or in the vicinity of defects, resulting in the increase of the local density of states associated with them, leading to some sort of structure of the density of states, as shown in Figure 21, which illustrates schematically the charge-transfer model.503 Another essential feature of this model is the presence of an electron reservoir, from which electrons can be transferred to the defect states. Ions coexisting in different valence states could serve as such a reservoir. If the density of states is sufficiently large, spontaneous Stoner spin splitting of the impurity band may occur.501 Generally, the Fermi level does not coincide with a sharp maximum in the density of states. However, electron transfer from the reservoir to the defect states could raise the Fermi level up to the point where the spontaneous Stoner splitting of the impurity band occurs, provided that the energy gain from spin splitting exceeds the energy cost of the charge transfer, and spontaneous ferromagnetic order of the defect-related electrons appears (see Figure 21). In TM-doped oxides, the charge transfer in doped oxides can be produced by mixed-valence TM ions. Note that in this model the enabling feature of the TM ions is not that they carry a magnetic moment, but it is their ability to feed electrons into the local density of states (or to accept charge from it) that explains the dopant cation’s ability to promote ferromagnetism. This general theory is able to explain a wide range of experimental observations, but needs solid experimental proof.
Figure 21 Charge-transfer ferromagnetism. (a) A defect-related density of states is linked to an electron reservoir. (b) By electron transfer to or from the defects, the Fermi level can be shifted to a position where spontaneous ferromagnetic splitting of the defect-related density of states occurs. Reprinted with permission Ref. 503.

Up to now, there is no decisive evidence in support of one or another mechanism responsible for ferromagnetic order in DMOs. Numerous theoretical and experimental data indicate that ferromagnetism in DMOs is associated with structural defects. For example, Liu et al.\textsuperscript{514} observed the increase of magnetization of Co-doped ZnO films upon annealing in vacuum, which is known to result in the creation of oxygen vacancies. Annealing in air, which caused oxygen to diffuse into the film thus decreasing concentration of oxygen vacancies, was found to decrease the magnetization value.\textsuperscript{514} Applying annealing in different oxidation atmospheres and in the presence or absence of Zn vapor, Khare et al.\textsuperscript{513} have demonstrated that Zn interstitials play a crucial role in the origin of ferromagnetism of Co-doped ZnO films. They also have found that magnetization of the films is not correlated with free-carrier concentration, which supports the bound polaron
model. In addition, several groups have reported that there is no correlation between the carrier concentration and ferromagnetism in DMOs. On the other hand, there are experimental results indicating that the increase in free carrier concentration favors ferromagnetic ordering in DMO, which speaks in favor of the carrier-mediated exchange mechanisms.

Summarizing, it is obvious that much remains to be done both experimentally and theoretically to reveal the origin of ferromagnetism in DMOs. It is still not sufficiently clear what is responsible for the observed magnetic hysteresis in magnetization measurements: uniformly doped hosts, secondary phases, magnetic contaminations, or lattice defects. To make conclusive judgment about the intrinsic nature of ferromagnetism revealed by SQUID measurements, optical and magneto-transport techniques sensitive to ferromagnetic order of the semiconductor matrix should be used. Magneto-optic spectroscopy, which probes the magneto-optical signal as a function of photon energy, can be used to verify the intrinsic nature of ferromagnetism in DMOs. The magneto-optical effect in DMOs is directly related to the interaction between the $d$-electrons of the TM ions and the $s,p$ electrons of the host semiconductor. Magneto-optic spectroscopy is particularly useful for thin film studies because the effect of substrate on the spectrum is negligible contrary to magnetization measurement. Recently, intrinsic room-temperature ferromagnetism has been confirmed by magneto-optic measurements in highly conductive ($n \sim 10^{20} \text{ cm}^{-3}$) ZnO films doped with Ti, Co, and V, while the ferromagnetic order in semiconducting (Zn,Mn)O samples was found to be of extrinsic origin. The authors claim that the observed strong $s$-$d$ exchange interaction points to the presence of carrier-mediated exchange which is very desirable for spintronics devices.
Later, the same group $^{523}$ has reported the observations of intrinsic ferromagnetism in semi-insulating ZnO samples doped with Mn and Co, which likely supports the model of magnetic polarons developed by Coey et al.$^{493}$

As for theoretic studies, the results from different theoretical approaches do not agree well with experimental data. Most likely, no single model is capable of explaining the properties of a wide class of TM-doped DMOs. As an example, Behan et al.$^{523}$ have demonstrated that two mechanisms – bound magnetic polarons and carrier-mediated exchange – can be operative in ZnO, depending on the density of charge carriers.

Table 3 magnetic and transport properties of various magnetic oxides.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Oxide</th>
<th>Dopant</th>
<th>Dopant concentration</th>
<th>$T_C$ (K)</th>
<th>Magnetization</th>
<th>Resistivity or carrier concentration</th>
<th>Reference</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ZnO</td>
<td>Mn</td>
<td>2% Mn+1%Al</td>
<td>$&gt;$300</td>
<td>$4.36 \mu_B$/Mn</td>
<td>$6.3 \times 10^{20}$ cm$^{-3}$ n-type</td>
<td>442</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Cr</td>
<td>1.1</td>
<td>$&gt;$395</td>
<td>$~0.7 \mu_B$/Cr</td>
<td></td>
<td>436</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>V</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>$&gt;$350</td>
<td>$0.5 \mu_B$/V</td>
<td>$1 \times 10^{18}$ cm$^{-3}$ n-type</td>
<td>438</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Co</td>
<td>$~$2</td>
<td>$&gt;$300</td>
<td>$5.9 \mu_B$/Co</td>
<td>$\geq 200$ $\Omega$ cm</td>
<td>446</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Co</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>790</td>
<td>$6.1 \mu_B$/Co</td>
<td></td>
<td>445</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Ni</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>$&gt;$300</td>
<td>$0.37 \mu_B$/Ni</td>
<td>$10^{17}$ - $6 \times 10^{18}$ cm$^{-3}$ n-type</td>
<td>448</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Ti</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>$&gt;$300</td>
<td>$0.5 \mu_B$/Ti</td>
<td></td>
<td>440</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Fe</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>400</td>
<td>$0.15 \mu_B$/Fe</td>
<td></td>
<td>449</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Cu</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>350</td>
<td>$1.8 \mu_B$/Cu</td>
<td>$10^{16}$ cm$^{-1}$ n-type</td>
<td>450</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Fe+Cu</td>
<td>5%Fe+1%Cu</td>
<td>550</td>
<td>$0.75 \mu_B$/Fe</td>
<td>$4.2 \times 10^{17}$ cm$^{-3}$ 0.1 $\Omega$ cm n-type</td>
<td>452</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>C</td>
<td>$~$1</td>
<td>$&gt;$400</td>
<td>$2.0$-$3.0 \mu_B$/C</td>
<td>$2.1 \times 10^{18}$ cm$^{-3}$ 0.195 $\Omega$ cm n-type</td>
<td>472</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Material</td>
<td>Substitution</td>
<td>Temperature</td>
<td>Magnetic Moment</td>
<td>Charge Concentration</td>
<td>Type</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>--------------</td>
<td>--------------</td>
<td>-------------</td>
<td>-----------------</td>
<td>----------------------</td>
<td>--------</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TiO₂</td>
<td>Co 1</td>
<td>~700</td>
<td>~1.4 μB/Co</td>
<td>~2.8×10¹⁸ cm⁻³</td>
<td>n-type</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cr 8</td>
<td>400-700</td>
<td>~0.5 μB/Cr</td>
<td>1.5×10¹⁹ cm⁻³</td>
<td>n-type</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cr 5</td>
<td>&gt;400</td>
<td>~2.6 μB/Cr</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>V 4</td>
<td>&gt;400</td>
<td>4.23 μB/V</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ni</td>
<td>&gt;400</td>
<td>~2.9 μB/Ni</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fe 2</td>
<td>300</td>
<td>2.4 μB/Fe</td>
<td>~10²² cm⁻³</td>
<td>0.0015 Ω cm</td>
<td>p-type</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>In₂O₃</td>
<td>Ni 5</td>
<td>&gt;300</td>
<td>0.03–0.06 μB/Ni</td>
<td>~2 Ω cm</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cr 2</td>
<td>850–930</td>
<td>1.5 μB/Cr</td>
<td>3×10¹⁵ cm⁻³</td>
<td>n-type</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fe+Mn Fe₀.₁₋ₓMnₓ</td>
<td>&gt;300</td>
<td>0.35 μB/Fe+Mn</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fe+Cu 20%Fe+2%Cu</td>
<td>750</td>
<td>1.45 μB/Fe</td>
<td>~6×10⁻⁴ Ω cm</td>
<td>n-type</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fe+Cu 15%Fe+5%Cu</td>
<td>&gt;300</td>
<td>0.502 μB/Fe</td>
<td>3.99×10¹⁸ cm⁻³</td>
<td>n-type</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fe 15</td>
<td>&gt;300</td>
<td>0.838 μB/Fe</td>
<td>3.60×10¹⁸ cm⁻³</td>
<td>n-type</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fe+Cr 10%Fe+10%Cr</td>
<td>&gt;300</td>
<td>0.35 emu/g</td>
<td>62 Ω cm</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(In,Sn)₂O₃</td>
<td>Ni 5</td>
<td>&gt;300</td>
<td>0.03–0.06 μB/Ni</td>
<td>~2×10⁻² Ω cm</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mn 5</td>
<td>&gt;300</td>
<td>0.8 μB/Mn</td>
<td>~2.5×10¹⁷ cm⁻³</td>
<td>n-type</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fe 15</td>
<td>&gt;300</td>
<td>0.291 μB/Fe</td>
<td>2.38×10¹⁸ cm⁻³</td>
<td>n-type</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fe+Cu 15%Fe+5%Cu</td>
<td>&gt;300</td>
<td>0.132 μB/Fe</td>
<td>7.35×10¹⁸ cm⁻³</td>
<td>n-type</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SnO₂</td>
<td>Co 5</td>
<td>650</td>
<td>7.5 μB/Co</td>
<td>~4.45×10¹⁸ cm⁻³</td>
<td>n-type</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fe 5</td>
<td>610</td>
<td>1.8 μB/Fe</td>
<td>0.4 Ω cm</td>
<td>n-type</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cr 5</td>
<td>&gt;400</td>
<td>6 μB/Cr</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>V ~7</td>
<td>~400</td>
<td>3 μB/V</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CeO₂</td>
<td>Co 3</td>
<td>740–875</td>
<td>8.2 μB/Co</td>
<td>n-type</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HfO₂</td>
<td>undoped</td>
<td>&gt;500</td>
<td>~0.15 μB/HfO₂</td>
<td>n-type</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TiO₂</td>
<td>undoped</td>
<td>600</td>
<td>~0.15 μB/Ti</td>
<td>~3×10¹⁷ cm⁻³</td>
<td>n-type</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
4.2 Mixed-Valence Manganites

Before we commence discussing properties of mixed-valence manganites, let us introduce a term of magnetoresistance (MR) and consider types of MR existing in nature. A simple definition of MR is a change of electrical resistance of a material when exposed to an applied magnetic field. There are several different types of magnetoresistance depending on the underlying physical mechanisms.

Conventional (ordinary) magnetoresistance is a change of electrical resistance of a material under applied magnetic field. Ordinary magnetoresistance arises from the field dependence of the mean-free path of charge carriers. This effect is measurable only in metals with a large mean free path in zero magnetic field, where an applied magnetic field reduces the mean free path by inducing the electrons to move in orbits. Even then, the change in resistivity is usually limited to a few percent in best samples tested in practical magnetic fields.

Colossal magnetoresistance (CMR)\textsuperscript{16,17,524} is a huge (orders of magnitude) change of electrical resistivity of a material under an applied magnetic field, which is observed mostly in manganese-based perovskite oxides near the Curie temperature in high magnetic fields. Due to the CMR effect resulting from a unique type of a metal–insulator transition, these oxides are considered as promising candidates for technological applications in magnetic devices. The CMR effect is also observed in the layered perovskites (Ruddlesden-Popper phases)\textsuperscript{525} and some pyrochlore-type oxides.\textsuperscript{526}
Giant magnetoresistance (GMR) represents a large (a few tens of percent) change in electrical resistance in response to an applied magnetic field. This quantum mechanical effect is observed in artificial structures, such as stacks of alternating nonmagnetic and antiferromagnetically coupled magnetic layers \(^{527, 528}\) and granular systems.\(^{529, 530}\) Electrical resistance of the nonmagnetic layers depends on the relative orientation of magnetic moments in the magnetic layers: the resistance is maximum for anti-parallel and minimum for parallel alignment of the magnetizations due to spin-dependent scattering of charge carriers. In zero field, the magnetic layers are coupled antiferromagnetically, and the resistance is high. Under applied magnetic field, magnetic moments of the adjacent magnetic layers become parallel, which results in lowering electrical resistance of the nonmagnetic layers. This phenomenon paved the way for realizing non-volatile magnetoresistive random access memory devices,\(^{531}\) which use magnetic moment direction for information storage and the resultant MR difference for sensing.

Tunneling magnetoresistance (TMR) is observed in structures called magnetic tunnel junctions (MTJs).\(^{532, 533}\) An MTJ consists of at least two magnetic layers separated by an ultra-thin insulating layer, which serves as a tunneling barrier. The tunneling current is measured perpendicular to the barrier. The tunneling resistance depends on the relative orientation of the magnetization of the two magnetic layers: it is minimum for parallel and maximum for antiparallel orientation. In addition, the resistance depends exponentially on the insulating barrier thickness.

A large negative magnetoresistance is observed also in polycrystalline samples due to spin-polarized tunneling between grains.\(^{534, 535, 536}\) In contrast to the CMR effect requiring large applied magnetic fields (typically a few Teslas), this effect is observed in
very low fields (< 0.5T) and is named as low field negative magnetoresistance (LFMR).
Enhanced LFMR response was observed in many manganite-based two-phase composites, containing insulating oxides, \(^{537,538,539,540,541,542,543,544,545,546,547}\) hard ferromagnetic materials, \(^{548}\) soft magnetic materials, \(^{549}\) metals, \(^{550}\) or other CMR oxides \(^{551}\) as a second phase. The presence of the secondary phases impedes the magnetic homogeneity near the grain boundary, increasing the height of the tunnel barrier between the neighboring ferromagnetic grains and thus influencing the tunneling process. In most cases, this strategy was applied to bulk ceramics or screen-printed thick films, but there are also reports on the LFMR effect in thin films. For example, Koster et al. \(^{538}\) successfully adopted this approach to La\(_{0.7}\)Ca\(_{0.3}\)MnO\(_3\)-MgO composite thin films, consisting of La\(_{0.7}\)Ca\(_{0.3}\)MnO\(_3\) columnar grains grown perpendicularly to the substrate surface and MgO located at the grain boundaries, acting as a tunneling barrier and enhancing spin polarized tunneling similar to a system with vertical artificial tunnel junctions. Liu et al. \(^{552}\) also reported enhanced LFMR effect on laser-ablated La\(_{0.5}\)Sr\(_{0.5}\)MnO\(_3\) thin films with amorphous La\(_{1-x}\)Sr\(_x\)MnO\(_3\) as insulating matrix. Since the LFMR effect is observed at low magnetic fields and in a rather wide temperature range, the LFMR composites are considered to be well suited for device applications.\(^{534,538}\)

### 4.2.1 Physical properties and crystal structure of manganites

Manganese oxides have the general formula Re\(_{1-x}\)A\(_x\)MnO\(_3\), where Re is a trivalent rare earth element (Re = La\(^{3+}\), Pr\(^{3+}\), Nd\(^{3+}\), Sm\(^{3+}\), Eu\(^{3+}\), etc.), and A is a divalent alkaline earth element (A = Ba\(^{2+}\), Sr\(^{2+}\), Ca\(^{2+}\), etc.). In these compounds, when divalent alkaline-earth ions substitute trivalent rare-earth ions at the A sites, part of Mn\(^{3+}\) cations convert
into Mn\textsuperscript{4+} valence state to maintain the charge neutrality of the system. In stoichiometric oxides, the fractions of Mn\textsuperscript{3+} and Mn\textsuperscript{4+} ions correspond to 1-x and x, respectively.

The Re\textsubscript{1-x}A\textsubscript{x}MnO\textsubscript{3} manganites crystallize into the perovskite structure (see Figure 10), where the large rare earth and alkaline earth ions fill the A sites with 12-fold oxygen coordination, and small Mn\textsuperscript{3+} and Mn\textsuperscript{4+} ions occupy the B sites located at the center of the oxygen octahedra. A Mn atom has an electronic configuration 1s\textsuperscript{2}2s\textsuperscript{2}2p\textsuperscript{6}3s\textsuperscript{2}3p\textsuperscript{6}3d\textsuperscript{5}4s\textsuperscript{2} with the incomplete d-shell. In the Re\textsubscript{1-x}A\textsubscript{x}MnO\textsubscript{3} lattice, Mn ions are in octahedral oxygen coordination, and the five-fold orbital degeneracy of the 3d levels of Mn is split by the octahedral crystal field into the lower-lying triply degenerate t\textsubscript{2g} states and the higher-lying doubly degenerate e\textsubscript{g} states (see Figure 22). According to the Hund’s first rule (maximum S), the d-electrons have the same spin orientation. An Mn\textsuperscript{3+} ion has an electronic configuration 3d\textsuperscript{4} with three electrons at the t\textsubscript{2g} levels and one electron at the e\textsubscript{g} level (S = 2). A Mn\textsuperscript{4+} ion with the 3d\textsuperscript{3} electron configuration has three t\textsubscript{2g} electrons and no electron at the e\textsubscript{g} level (S = 3/2). The degeneracy of the t\textsubscript{2g} and e\textsubscript{g} levels can be further removed as a result of the Jahn–Teller distortion: a crystal field with symmetry lower than octahedral (which takes place, for example, when the oxygen octahedron is axially elongated) lifts the degeneracy of the t\textsubscript{2g} and e\textsubscript{g} levels, as shown on the right side of Figure 22. One can see that the energy of the Mn\textsuperscript{4+} ion having no e\textsubscript{g} electrons remains unchanged, whereas the energy of the e\textsubscript{g} occupied state of the Mn\textsuperscript{3+} ion is lowered due to the Jahn–Teller distortion at a cost of the lattice energy. Therefore, Mn\textsuperscript{3+} ions have a great tendency to the Jahn–Teller distortion of their octahedral environment. In the manganites with high concentration of Mn\textsuperscript{3+} ions, cooperative Jahn–Teller distortions take place, leading to lowering of the lattice symmetry. For example, the compound
LaMnO$_3$ containing Mn in the 3+ state has the orthorhombically distorted perovskite lattice.

**Figure 22** Crystal-field splitting (CFS) of the five-fold degenerate atomic 3d levels into lower $t_{2g}$ (triply degenerate) and higher $e_g$ (doubly degenerate) levels (in the middle). The Jahn–Teller (JT) distortion of the MnO$_6$ octahedron further lifts each degeneracy. Splitting of the $t_{2g}$ and $e_g$ levels and distortion of the MnO$_6$ octahedron due to the Jahn–Teller effect is shown on the right side.

Depending on composition, Re$_{1-x}$A$_x$MnO$_3$ compounds exhibit a wide range of electronic and magnetic phases, ranging from low-resistance ferromagnetic metals to high-resistance insulators. At high temperatures, these materials are paramagnetic and semiconducting or insulating. When the temperature is decreased, a transition from the paramagnetic to ferromagnetic metallic state occurs at the Curie temperature, the value of which depends both on the doping level $x$ and the average ionic radius $r_A$ of the cation in
the A position. The correlation between the electrical conduction and ferromagnetism in certain perovskite manganites were first studied by van Santen and Jonker\textsuperscript{553,554} in the 1950’s. They revealed a striking correlation between the magnetic Curie temperature, saturation magnetization, and electrical conductivity in La\textsubscript{1-x}A\textsubscript{x}MnO\textsubscript{3} (A = Ca\textsuperscript{2+}, Sr\textsuperscript{2+}, or Ba\textsuperscript{2+}) compounds, when measured as a function of $x$. It was found that the Curie temperature $T_C$ and magnetoresistance $M_S$ reach optimum values at $x \approx 0.3$, i.e. when about 30% of Mn\textsuperscript{3+} ions are converted to the Mn\textsuperscript{4+} state.\textsuperscript{524,554} For example, for polycrystalline La\textsubscript{0.7}Sr\textsubscript{0.3}MnO\textsubscript{3} samples, $T_{C,\text{max}} = 370$ K, $M_{S,\text{max}} \approx 90$ G/g, and the electrical conductivity, $\sigma_{\text{max}} = 300 \, \Omega^{-1} \text{cm}^{-1}$. Santen and Jonker\textsuperscript{553,554} also have found other basic properties of manganites, which were confirmed by careful examination of their results in many experiments. These are listed below:

- The maximum Curie temperature, minimum electrical resistivity, and linear relationship between the magnetoresistance and magnetization of the specimens, is observed when $x \approx 0.3$;
- Both divalent element content and oxygen stoichiometry can transform part of Mn\textsuperscript{3+} ions to Mn\textsuperscript{4+} ions;
- The relevant parameter determining $T_C$ is not the distance between Mn atoms, but the angle of the Mn-O-Mn bond.

The magnetic properties of the manganites are governed by indirect exchange interactions between magnetic moments of Mn ions. A striking correlation between the magnetic and transport properties revealed first by van Santen and Jonker\textsuperscript{553,554,555} was
explained theoretically by the double-exchange mechanism proposed by Zener and further elaborated on by Anderson and Hasegawa, de Gennes, and Goodenough. Zener presumed that ferromagnetism of the doped manganites arises from an indirect coupling between the $d$-shells of Mn$^{3+}$ and Mn$^{4+}$ ions separated by an oxygen atom. As described above, in the doped manganites Mn exists in two states: Mn$^{3+}$ with one electron at the $e_g$ level and Mn$^{4+}$ having no electrons at the $e_g$ level. An $e_{2g}$-electron localized at a Mn$^{3+}$ ion can hop on the vacant place of a neighboring Mn$^{4+}$ ion (which corresponds to the movement of a hole in the opposite direction). The transfer of a charge carrier occurs simultaneously from Mn$^{3+}$ to O$^{2-}$ and from O$^{2-}$ to Mn$^{4+}$. Since Hund’s rule coupling is strong, the carriers can hop from one Mn ion to another only if the the core spins of the two ions are parallel.

This double-exchange mechanism is the basic mechanism of electrical transport and explains the observed simultaneous occurrence of metallic conductivity and ferromagnetism in the manganites. Since the same $e_g$ electrons are responsible for electrical transport and ferromagnetic interaction, the paramagnetic-to-ferromagnetic transition in the doped manganites is accompanied with insulator-to-metal transition around the ferromagnetic Curie temperature. An external magnetic field applied at temperatures around $T_C$ promotes alignment of the local spins and hence reduces the randomness of the electron hopping, which increases the electrical conductivity markedly, giving rise to the CMR effect. It should be noted that the double exchange takes place between Mn ions with different valence states and is always ferromagnetic, unlike the super-exchange interaction which occurs between two next-to-nearest neighbor Mn ions of the same valence separated by an oxygen atom and is frequently
antiferromagnetic.\textsuperscript{558, 559, 560} The competition between the exchange mechanisms is apparently responsible for the complex phase diagrams of the Re\textsubscript{1-x}A\textsubscript{x}MnO\textsubscript{3} compounds.

Anderson and Hasegawa\textsuperscript{556} derived the dependence of the probability of carrier transfer between the Mn ions on the angle between their spins:

\[ \tau = \tau_0 \cos(\theta/2), \quad \text{Equation 7} \]

where \( \tau \) is the transfer integral, \( \tau_0 \) is the normal transfer integral which depends on the spatial wavefunctions, and \( \theta \) is the angle between the two spin directions. The transfer probability varies from 1 at \( \theta = 0 \) to zero at \( \theta = 180^\circ \). This \( \cos(\theta/2) \) angular dependence is quite different from the \( \cos(\theta) \) dependence for the usual exchange interaction.

Considering the case of low-doped LaMnO\textsubscript{3}, where mobile “Zener” electrons exist in the antiferromagnetic matrix, de Gennes\textsuperscript{557} has found that the coexistence of the ferromagnetic double-exchange and antiferromagnetic superexchange interactions results in a spin-canted state. It should be mentioned, however, that more recent theoretical investigations revealed that phase separation into ferro- and antiferromagnetic regions rather than the canted state takes place at low doping levels.\textsuperscript{561} In addition, de Gennes considered localization of charge carriers in the vicinity of a divalent A-site ion. The bound charge carrier interacts with spins on neighbouring B sites and produces a local distortion of the spin lattice, which is the concept of the bound magnetic polaron.

The double-exchange theory allowed qualitative explanation of the transport properties of the manganites, but was inconsistent with a number of experimental results. It predicted wrong values of resistivity and the Curie temperature, too slow doping dependence, an incorrect behavior for \( T < T_C \) or under an applied field, and failed to explain the huge magnitude of the CMR effect. This discrepancy was resolved by Millis
et al.\textsuperscript{562,563,564,565,566} who proposed that, in addition to the double-exchange interaction, a strong electron–phonon coupling due to the dynamic Jahn-Teller distortion is responsible for the manganite properties. The electron-phonon coupling arises from the Jahn-Teller splitting of the $d$ level of Mn$^{3+}$ (see Figure 22). The $e_g$ electron occupying the lowest-energy $e_g$ level together with the surrounding locally distorted lattice forms a self-trapped state called a Jahn–Teller polaron. According to Millis\textsuperscript{566} the transport in the manganites is governed by a competition between the self-trapping and delocalization due to the ferromagnetic ordering. The strength of the electron–phonon coupling is characterized by a dimensionless quantity $\lambda$, which is defined as\textsuperscript{566}

$$\lambda = \frac{E_{\text{latt}}}{t_{\text{eff}}},$$  

Equation 8

where $E_{\text{latt}}$ is the energy gained from the electron–phonon coupling in the absence of hybridization and $t_{\text{eff}}$ is ‘bare’ electron kinetic energy. At high temperatures (above the Curie temperature), $t_{\text{eff}}$ is sufficiently small, and $\lambda$ is so large that the electron–phonon interaction localizes the electrons, leading to the observed activated resistivity behavior in the paramagnetic phase. As the temperature decreases through $T_c$, the growing ferromagnetic order increases $t_{\text{eff}}$, thus decreasing $\lambda$, which allows delocalization of the $e_g$ electrons and results in metallic behavior. The theory by Millis \textit{et al.}\textsuperscript{562} predicts more correct $T_c$ values and explains the insulating behavior above $T_c$ and the huge value of the CMR effect. More thorough consideration of physics in the mixed-valence manganites can be found in other reviews.\textsuperscript{567,568,569,570,571}

4.2.1.1 Half metallicity

The charge transfer in the ferromagnetic manganites is provided by spin-polarized electrons. Such ferromagnets having only one type of conduction
electrons are called “half-metallic”. This class of materials was discovered by de Groot et al. in 1983. The half-metallic ferromagnets exhibit an energy gap between valence and conduction bands for electrons of one spin direction and continuous bands for the electrons of the other spin direction, so that the minority electrons (spins antiparallel to magnetization) are semiconducting, whereas the majority electrons (spins parallel to magnetization) show metallic behavior. As a result, the conduction electrons at the Fermi level are 100% spin polarized. This unique property distinguishes them from usual ferromagnetic metals, in which spins of conduction electrons have both directions. Figure 23 compares conduction bands of a typical ferromagnetic metal (Ni) and half-metallic La$_{2/3}$Sr$_{1/3}$MnO$_3$. The wide conduction band of Ni is split into minority and majority carrier bands offset by a small exchange energy (~0.6 eV), which results in a partial (~11%) electron polarization. To the contrary, in La$_{2/3}$Sr$_{1/3}$MnO$_3$ the narrow majority and minority bands are completely separated by large Hund’s energy, as well as an exchange energy (~2.5 eV), which leads to complete polarization of the carriers. Thus, the electronic density of states is completely spin-polarized at the Fermi level, and the conductivity is provided by spin-polarized electrons, which makes this class of materials very promising for spintronics applications.
Figure 23 Energy level diagram comparing the conduction band of Ni with La$_{2/3}$Sr$_{1/3}$MnO$_3$. Reprinted with permission Ref. 534 Numerical values are from Refs. 573, 574, 575, 576. This is so generic that we can produce our own. However, we would still cite the reference in the text*.

The half-metallic nature of the doped manganites is, however, still under debate. Theoretical and experimental values of the spin polarization obtained by different techniques vary over a wide range.\textsuperscript{577, 578, 579, 580, 581, 582, 583, 584} Local spin-density approximation (LSDA) band calculation for La$_{0.67}$Ca$_{0.33}$MnO$_3$ predicted a spin polarization of only 36% at the Fermi level.\textsuperscript{577} At the same time, Park et al.\textsuperscript{580} reported pure half-metallic behavior of La$_{0.7}$Sr$_{0.3}$MnO$_3$ well below the Curie temperature. From spin-resolved photoemission spectroscopy data, the authors concluded that the spin polarization in La$_{0.7}$Sr$_{0.3}$MnO$_3$ was 100%. Spin-resolved tunneling experiments\textsuperscript{578, 578, 580} revealed an incomplete spin polarization for La$_{0.67}$Sr$_{0.33}$MnO$_3$ (54% and 81%, respectively). Worlege and Geballe\textsuperscript{581} also reported an incomplete spin polarization of only 72% in this compound. Spin polarized tunnelling transport studies performed by Bowen et al.\textsuperscript{583} on La$_{2/3}$Sr$_{1/3}$MnO$_3$/SrTiO$_3$ heterostructures have demonstrated a spin
polarization value of up to 99%. Nadgorny et al.\textsuperscript{582} studied the spin polarization in bulk La$_{0.7}$Sr$_{0.3}$MnO$_3$ using the point-contact Andreev reflection technique. Their results strongly suggest that this material does have minority spin states at the Fermi level and thus is not a true half-metal. At the same time, the authors revealed a high degree of current spin polarization $P$ ($58\% < P < 92\%$) in La$_{0.7}$Sr$_{0.3}$MnO$_3$. The origin of this high current spin polarization was attributed to a large difference in mobility of the spin-up and spin-down electrons rather than their density of states, so that the minority electrons do exist at the Fermi level, but do not contribute to the conduction due to their much lower mobility relative to majority electrons. For this reason, Nadgorny et al.\textsuperscript{582} called La$_{0.7}$Sr$_{0.3}$MnO$_3$ a “transport half-metal”.

4.2.1.2 Tolerance factor

In the ideal perovskite structure (see Figure 10), the ratio between the A-O and B-O bond lengths should be equal to $\sqrt{2}$. In reality, the crystal structure of the doped manganites is usually distorted due to the difference in size between the rare-earth and alkaline-earth cations and due to the Jahn-Teller effect. The lattice distortion in the perovskites is characterized by Goldschmidt’s tolerance factor $t$,\textsuperscript{585} which is a geometric parameter that measures the deviation from perfect cubic structure. It is defined as

$$t = \frac{d_{A-O}}{\sqrt{2}d_{B-O}}$$

or, since the bond lengths are mainly determined by the ionic radii

$$t = \frac{(r_A + r_O)}{\sqrt{2}(r_B + r_O)}$$

where $d_{A-O}$ ($d_{B-O}$) is the the distances between the A (B) site and the nearest O ion, and $r_A$, $r_B$, and $r_O$ are the average ionic sizes of A, B, and oxygen ions, respectively. For the
perfect closely packed cubic structure $t$ is equal to 1, but the perovskite structure is stable in the range $0.89 < t < 1.02$. As $t$ (i.e. $r_A$) decreases, the lattice structure transforms from cubic to the rhombohedrally distorted $R3\bar{c}$ structure ($0.96 < t < 1$) due to a cooperative rotation of the BO$_6$ octahedra around the cubic [111] axis, and then to the orthorhombic $Pbnm$ structure of the GdFeO$_3$ type ($t < 0.96$) due to a buckling of the network of octahedra corresponding to cooperative rotation about the [110] axis. As a result of this lattice distortion, the Mn–O–Mn bond angle (which is 180° for the cubic perovskite structure) decreases with decreasing the tolerance factor.

The tolerance factor (i.e. $r_A$) have a profound influence on the properties of the doped Re$_{1-x}$A$_x$MnO$_3$ manganites. Hwang et al. performed a detailed study of the relationship between the Curie temperature and the tolerance factor for doped LaMnO$_3$ compounds. In their study, the average ionic radius of the cation at the A site $r_A$ was varied by substituting different rare-earth ions for La, and the hole concentration was fixed at 0.3 by keeping the concentration of a divalent alkaline earth element constant. Figure 24 shows the resulting $T_c$-$r_A$ diagram. Three principal regions are observed in the diagram: a paramagnetic insulator (PMI) at high temperatures, a ferromagnetic metal (FMM) at low temperatures and large $r_A$, and a ferromagnetic insulator (FMI) at low temperatures and small $r_A$. The Curie temperature is maximum (~365K) at $r_A = 1.24\AA$ ($t = 0.93$) and decreases with decreasing $r_A$. As mentioned above, the reduction of $r_A$ leads to bending of the Mn–O–Mn bond, which disturbs the exchange interaction between the Mn$^{3+}$ and Mn$^{4+}$ ion spins and decreases the carrier mobility. As a result, the temperature range of ferromagnetic ordering becomes narrower with decreasing $r_A$ and an insulating phase appears for small $r_A$ (Figure 24).
4.2.1.3 Charge and Orbital Ordering

Charge ordering is a phenomenon observed in the doped manganites when cations with different oxidation states are located on specific lattice sites, forming a long-range ordered structure. This phenomenon arises from interactions between the charge carriers and phonons and takes place at low temperatures, when mobile electrons can be localized on certain Mn ions to form a regular lattice. Charge ordering is driven by interatomic Coulomb interactions and most likely occurs in the $\text{Re}_{1-x}\text{A}_x\text{MnO}_3$ compounds when proportions of $\text{Mn}^{3+}$ and $\text{Mn}^{4+}$ ions are rational fractions, e.g., when $x=\frac{1}{8}$, $\frac{1}{2}$, or $\frac{3}{4}$. In a charge-ordered lattice, electrons are localized due to the ordering of $\text{Mn}^{3+}$ and $\text{Mn}^{4+}$.
cations on specific lattice sites, as shown in Figure 25(a). Thus, charge ordering promotes insulating and antiferromagnetic behavior of a material.

In addition to the charge ordering, the Mn$^{3+}$ $e_g$ orbitals and the associated lattice distortions can exhibit long-range ordering, called orbital ordering (see Figure 25(b)). The driving force is electrostatic repulsion of the charge clouds, and coupled Jahn-Teller distortions of adjacent octahedra stabilize the effect. Figure 25(c) illustrates the coupled charge and orbital order.

**Figure 25**
(a) Charge ordering of Mn$^{3+}$ and Mn$^{4+}$ in a mixed crystal with $x = 0.5$. (b) Orbital ordering of the $d_z^2$ orbitals of Mn$^{3+}$ when $x = 0$. (c) Combined charge and orbital ordering when $x = 0.5$. Reprinted with permission Ref. 588

### 4.2.1.4 Oxygen stoichiometry

Oxygen content is another important parameter determining the magnetic and transport properties due to its influence on the Mn$^{4+}$/Mn$^{3+}$ ratio and the Mn–O–Mn bond angles. Taking into account the valent states of all constituencies, we can write the chemical formula of mixed-valence manganites as $\text{Re}_{1-x}^2 A_e^{2+} Mn_{1-z}^{3+} Mn_{z}^{4+} O_{3-\delta}^{2-}$. One can see that a deviation of the oxygen content from the stoichiometric value, $\delta$, 

97
inevitably changes the concentration of Mn$^{4+}$ ions, $z$, to satisfy the neutrality condition. Thus, oxygen deficiency in the mixed-valence manganites results in the decrease of hole concentration and, consequently, in weaker double-exchange interaction, lower conductivity, lower magnetization, and the lower Curie temperature.

4.2.2 Phase diagrams

The phase diagrams of Re$_{1-x}$A$_x$MnO$_3$ manganites have a complex dependence on the doping level, $x$, that comes from the competition between the ferromagnetic double-exchange interaction, antiferromagnetic superexchange interaction, charge/orbital-ordering, and effects of the Jahn-Teller distortion. There have been a number of reports on the phase diagram of manganites, particularly for La$_{1-x}$Sr$_x$MnO$_3$, La$_{1-x}$Ca$_x$MnO$_3$, Pr$_{1-x}$Ca$_x$MnO$_3$, Pr$_{1-x}$Sr$_x$MnO$_3$, Pr$_{1-x}$SrxMnO$_3$, Nd$_{1-x}$Sr$_x$MnO$_3$, Sm$_{1-x}$Sr$_x$MnO$_3$, and Sm$_{1-x}$Ca$_x$MnO$_3$. A thorough analysis of the phase diagrams of the mixed-valence manganites can be found in Refs. In this paper, we consider the phase diagram of the most popular compounds, namely La$_{1-x}$Sr$_x$MnO$_3$ and La$_{1-x}$Ca$_x$MnO$_3$.

4.2.2.1 La$_{1-x}$Ca$_x$MnO$_3$ phase diagram

La$_x$Ca$_{1-x}$MnO$_3$ (LCMO) may be considered as a solid solution of LaMnO$_3$ and CaMnO$_3$. The complete phase diagram of La$_{1-x}$Ca$_x$MnO$_3$ was first reported by Schiffer et al. who carried out magnetization and resistivity measurements over a broad range of temperatures and doping levels as well. A more detailed phase diagram was constructed
later by Cheong and Hwang.\textsuperscript{605} The phase diagram of La$_{1-x}$Ca$_x$MnO$_3$ is shown in Figure 26. The parent compounds, LaMnO$_3$ and CaMnO$_3$, are antiferromagnetic at low temperatures and insulating at all temperatures. At high temperatures, LCMO is a paramagnetic insulator over the whole composition range. At low temperatures, Ca doping leads to a series of phase transitions. At low dopant level ($x < 0.175$), canted antiferromagnetic and then ferromagnetic insulating and charge-ordered phases are observed (Figure 26). In the Ca concentration range from 0.175 to 0.50, LCMO is a ferromagnetic metal. The CMR effect occurs in the aforementioned composition range. Near $x = 0.50$, the ground state of the material changes from a ferromagnetic conductor to a charge-ordered antiferromagnetic insulator. At high doping level ($x > 0.87$), LCMO becomes a canted antiferromagnetic insulator again. Note that some peculiar features appear in the diagram at commensurate Ca concentrations, indicating the importance of electron–lattice coupling:\textsuperscript{605} the Curie temperature reaches its maximum at $x = rac{3}{8}$ (0.375), and the charge-ordering temperatures peak at $x = rac{1}{8}$ (0.125) and $x = rac{5}{8}$ (0.625). At $x = rac{4}{8}$ (0.5), the phase boundary between the ferromagnetic and charge-ordered antiferromagnetic states takes place; and there is another phase boundary at $x = rac{7}{8}$ (0.875).
4.2.2.2 La$_{1-x}$Sr$_x$MnO$_3$ phase diagram

The rich and complex phase diagram of La$_{1-x}$Sr$_x$MnO$_3$ (LSMO), a solid solution of LaMnO$_3$ and SrMnO$_3$, has been studied by many groups. The first phase diagram of LSMO was reported as early as 1950 by Jonker and van Santen and result is very close those obtained recently by Paraskevopoulos et al. and by Hemberger et al. Paraskevopoulos et al. performed detailed studies of susceptibility, magnetization, and magnetoresistance of La$_{1-x}$Sr$_x$MnO$_3$ for $x \ll 0.2$, and constructed a phase diagram which showed a ferromagnetic and insulating ground state for $0.1 \ll x \ll 0.15$, followed by a canted antiferromagnetic phase at higher temperatures. The ferromagnetic transition was stated to be strongly coupled to a structural transition from a Jahn–Teller distorted phase to a pseudocubic orthorhombic phase and accompanied by
the appearance of large positive magnetoresistance effects. The observations were interpreted by the authors by means of orbital ordering, due to interplay between superexchange interaction and Jahn–Teller distortion.

Figure 27 shows the phase diagram of LSMO for the entire concentration range (0<x<1) constructed by Hemberger et al. with the use of the results by Paraskevopoulos et al. for 0<x<0.3. The phase diagram shows a pronounced asymmetry between the hole-doped (x<0.5) and the electron-doped (x>0.5) regions, originating mostly from geometrical constraints via the tolerance factor, which increases from 0.89 to 1.01 as x rises from 0 to 1, i.e. buckling of the MnO$_6$ octahedra in LSMO decreases with increasing Sr concentration. In addition, this asymmetry is driven by the increasing importance of orbital degeneracy with increasing concentration. Near x=0, the strong Jahn-Teller distortions provide orbital order that determines the antiferromagnetic A-type spin structure. For higher doping levels, orbital degeneracy plays an important role yielding completely different spin ground states. When x is increased, a ferromagnetic component evolves in addition to the anti-ferromagnetic order of subsequent planes. As the concentration increases to x>0.17, LSMO becomes a ferromagnetic metal with a rhombohedral structure and exhibits the CMR effect. Near x~0.5, a ferromagnetic metallic phase with a tetragonal structure appears, which undergoes a transition into a monoclinic antiferromagnetic phase with decreasing temperature, but still exhibits metallic behavior. At x~0.6, a two-dimensional metallic antiferromagnetic phase with a monoclinic structure evolves. For x>0.75, LSMO is in a purely antiferromagnetic and insulating, and has a nearly cubic structure.
Figure 27 Phase diagram of La$_{1-x}$Sr$_x$MnO$_3$ for the whole concentration range. The crystal structures (Jahn-Teller distorted orthorhombic: O’, orthorhombic O; orbital-ordered orthorhombic: O”, rhombohedral: R, tetragonal: T, monoclinic: Mc, and hexagonal: H) are indicated as well as the magnetic structures (paramagnetic: PM, short-range order (SR), canted (CA), $A$-type antiferromagnetic structure: AFM, ferromagnetic: FM, phase separated (PS), and AFM C-type structure) and the electronic state (insulating: $I$, metallic: $M$). Reprinted with permission Ref. 603

4.2.3 Doping on Mn site

Doping of $A_2B_{1-x}MnO_3$ with various 3d transition metal ions substituting the Mn site (Ni, $^{623,624}$ Bi, $^{625}$ Cu, $^{626,627}$ Cr, $^{628}$ Zn, $^{629}$ Ga, $^{630,631}$ Al, $^{632,633}$ Mg, $^{634}$ Nb, $^{634}$ Ti, $^{635}$ Ta, $^{636}$ Sb, $^{637,638}$ Fe, $^{639,640,641}$ Zr, $^{641}$ Hf, $^{641}$ Ru $^{642,643,644,645,646,647}$ ) has a great of influence on the double exchange interaction and conduction mechanisms and allows tailoring the material characteristics for specific device applications. Most of the impurities substituting Mn decrease the Curie temperature (and the associated metal-insulator transition temperature), which has been explained by weakening of the ferromagnetic
order due to the interruption of the double exchange interaction between Mn⁴⁺ and Mn³⁺ ions. The only exception is Ru doping, which can increase the Curie temperature and induce metallic behavior and ferromagnetism in some antiferromagnetic materials. It was argued that Ru favors the double-exchange interaction because it can exist in the mixed valence state with d3 and d4 electronic configurations similar to those of Mn⁴⁺ and Mn³⁺, which makes possible ferromagnetic interaction between the Mn³⁺ and Ru⁵+/⁴⁺ ions.

4.2.4 Growth of manganite thin films

For most device applications, a material should be in the form of thin films and preferably with superior quality which necessitates growing epitaxial thin films. Single-crystal layers of the Re₁₋ₓAₓMnO₃ compounds have been grown by various techniques, including pulsed laser deposition, metal-organic chemical vapor deposition, atomic layer deposition, sputter deposition, molecular beam epitaxy, and the sol-gel method. A comprehensive treatment of various aspects of manganite film growth and properties can be found in the reviews by Haghiri-Gosnet, Prellier, and Van Tendeloo. Here, we overview briefly the methods currently used for the growth of manganite thin films and the effects of growth conditions and substrate clamping on film properties.

4.2.4.1 Pulsed laser deposition of manganite thin films

PLD is a simple and straightforward method for the growth of thin films of complex compounds. In PLD, films are deposited by ablating a target of a desired
composition with a laser in oxygen ambient. As discussed in Section 3.3.4, the mechanism of PLD growth is rather complex. Oxygen pressure in the chamber, substrate temperature, and the target-to-substrate distance are the main parameters determining structural, transport, and magnetic properties of PLD produced films.

Studying the effect PLD parameters on structural and physical properties of La$_{0.7}$Sr$_{0.3}$MnO$_3$ films grown on (100)SrTiO$_3$ substrates, Koubaa et al. uncovered a strong dependence of microstructure, surface morphology, the Curie temperature, saturation magnetization value, and low-temperature resistivity of the layers on the substrate-to-target distance $D$ (see Figure 28). For each set of growth parameters, the optimal distance $D = L_0$ can be calculated using the $P-D$ scaling law obtained from the “wave blast” model

$$PD^3 = \text{constant}, \quad \text{Equation 11}$$

where $P$ is growth pressure, and $L_0$ is a so-called “plume range”, the particular target-to-substrate distance, for which all the species are thermalized in the plume. In the $D-P$ diagram shown in Figure 28a, $L_0$ defines two distinct regions for the morphology and the microstructure. When $D < L_0$, the films exhibit a dense, smooth, and large grain morphology due to the bombardment of the film surface by a nonthermalized directive energetic particles. These films are perfectly epitaxial, single-phase, and not relaxed. When $D >> L_0$, very rough films with columnar structure were obtained.

The films with best magnetic and electrical properties were grown in a sharp transition window between these two regions. As seen from Figure 28b, at a substrate temperature of 570 °C and an oxygen pressure of 350 mTorr, the optimal substrate-to-target distance is 5 cm. The films deposited at $D = 5$ cm exhibited properties very similar
to those of bulk samples, with a sharp decrease of magnetization at $T_C$, the highest saturation moment of $\sim 2.9$ $\mu$B per formula unit, and the lowest resistivity of 125 mVcm$^6$. Such a strong distance dependence of the film properties was explained as follows. $L_0$ is the transition distance at which the energetic species start to be sharply thermalized. At high pressures, this transition region in the plasma is spatially very sharp. $L_0$ Thus, the growth parameters providing films with optimized structural, magnetic, and electrical properties should be chosen in this very sharp window that corresponds to the plume range $L_0$. Armed with the above knowledge, Koubaa et al.$^6$ have demonstrated that LSMO films with a low roughness, dense morphology, and good magnetic and electrical properties can be grown in a very narrow window of PLD parameters.

Figure 28
Variation of the Curie temperature $T_C$ and the resistivity at 20 K as a function
of the target-to-substrate distance $D$ (lower panel) in accordance with the $P–D$ diagram for morphology evolution (upper panel). Reprinted with permission Ref. 650

The influence of growth and annealing temperatures on the resistivity and magneto-resistance behavior of Nd$_{0.7}$Sr$_{0.3}$MnO$_{3-\delta}$ and La$_{0.67}$Ba$_{0.33}$MnO$_{3-\delta}$ PLD films was studied by Xiong et al.\textsuperscript{691} It was found that the deposition at a high temperature and annealing at a high temperature have opposite effects on the resistivity of the films. At a fixed gas pressure (300 mTorr N$_2$O), the layers grown at a higher substrate temperature (600–850 °C) showed a larger resistivity maximum and a lower conductor-insulator transition temperature. To the contrary, high-temperature (900 °C) annealing in oxygen atmosphere reduced the resistivity maximum and increased the transition temperature. The decrease in the film resistivity and the increase in the temperature of semiconductor–metal transition upon high-temperature annealing in oxygen has been reported also for MOCVD films.\textsuperscript{663} These results were attributed to the variation of oxygen content in the films during deposition and subsequent heat treatment. The growth at a high substrate temperature can result in oxygen deficiency, while heat treatment in oxygen atmosphere can refill oxygen into oxygen-deficient films. The variation in the oxygen content leads to the variation in the Mn$^{3+}$/Mn$^{4+}$ ratio in Nd$_{0.7}$Sr$_{0.3}$MnO$_{3-\delta}$ and La$_{0.67}$Ba$_{0.33}$MnO$_{3-\delta}$, and thus influences the resistivity and magneto-resistance behavior of the films. In addition to the oxygen content, annealing can affect the defect and vacancy motion and recombination, thus affecting the resistivity and the GMR ratio. These findings led the authors to the conclusion that oxygen stoichiometry and diffusion are important factors determining the magneto-resistance behavior of doped manganites.
4.2.4.2 Metal Organic Chemical Vapor Deposition of manganite thin films

MOCVD offers many advantages, including high deposition rates, easy control over film composition, excellent crystallinity, good step coverage and capability of coating complex shapes, uniformity of film composition and thickness over a large area, and compatibility with the standard semiconductor technology. A great disadvantage of this technique for doped manganite growth is the poor volatility and thermal stability of Ba, Sr and other rare-earth based oxide precursors. Several solutions have been proposed to overcome this problem. For example, a pulsed liquid injection delivery scheme allowing the generation of a stable gas phase from unstable precursors was developed. Abrutis et al. used this technique to grow high-quality LSMO films. The deposition was carried out in a vertical hot wall injection CVD reactor, shown in Figure 29. The reactor has three evaporators, each connecting one injector. The latter injects microdoses of a solution containing a dissolved mixture of organo-metallic precursors. After injecting, the droplet immediately evaporates and the resulting vapor is transported by an Ar-O2 carrier gas towards the substrate. The pulse width determines the volume of each droplet, and the injection frequency keeps the amount of reactants at a certain level during growth. The injector is a computer-controlled high-speed precision electromagnetic valve. Several injectors can be used simultaneously in one system whose settings can be changed during growth. This technique allows also the growth of superlattices with ultrathin films of a few monolayers. Dubourdieu et al. reported the deposition of La0.7Sr0.3MnO3 /SrTiO3 superlattices consisting of 15 bilayers by pulsed liquid-injection MOCVD. The thickness of each layer was precisely controlled by adjusting injection parameters.
Electrical and magnetic properties of MOCVD grown films are strongly dependent on their composition, crystal perfection, stoichiometry, strain, oxygen content and therefore are very sensitive to growth conditions. Abrutis et al.\textsuperscript{663} have reported that the most important factors are the deposition temperature, solution composition, and the ratio of oxygen flow rate to solvent and precursor vapor flow rate. They found that an increase in the deposition temperature led to an increase in the temperature coefficient of resistance (TCR), magnetoresistance ratio (MR), and the semiconductor–metal transition temperature $T_\rho$. But $T_\rho$ was less sensitive to the deposition temperature when a solution more rich in Mn was used. Abrutis et al.\textsuperscript{663} explained this finding by the influence of the substrate temperature on the decomposition reaction of precursors (and, consequently, on the film stoichiometry), and presumed that this influence is stronger for the Mn precursor.

\textbf{Figure 29} Schematic representation of injection MOCVD reactor. Reprinted with permission Ref. 663.
Thus, the authors suggested that the deposition temperature determined the degree of deviation from the stoichiometric Mn concentration in the films. This explanation was supported by the fact that similar behavior (TCR and MR increased together with $T_\rho$) was observed for a series of films deposited at the same temperature from solutions with a variable Mn content. The best films were deposited at 825°C on LaAlO$_3$ substrates from solutions with the composition La$_{0.6}$Sr$_{0.4}$Mn$_{0.63}$. These films exhibited $T_\rho = 320$K, TCR of $\sim 4.5\%$ (300 K), and MR of $\sim 43\%$ (1.5 T, 300 K). The peak resistivity of the films was about 10 m$\Omega$ cm, and the resistivity at 100 K was about 130 $\mu\Omega$ cm.

Figure 30 a and b illustrate the effects of oxygen partial pressure and injection frequency (i.e. solvent + precursor vapor flow rate) on the properties of LSMO films, respectively. One can see that the increase in the oxygen pressure and the decrease in the injection frequency have the same effect: $T_\rho$ decreases, while the values of TCR and MR increases. Figure 30c shows the film properties vs. the ratio of oxygen and solvent + precursor vapor flow rates $V_{O2}/V_{vapor}$ (calculated from the data of Figure 30 a and b). The dependencies presented in Figure 30c were obtained in two series of measurements, one with variable oxygen partial pressure and the other with variable injection frequency. One can see that both dependencies are very similar, evidencing that the factor influencing the film properties is excess oxygen with respect to the vapor concentration. The authors have suggested that the variation in the oxygen concentration influences the yields of precursor decomposition reactions and, consequently, the film composition, most probably, the Sr content, since the behavior of $T_\rho$, TCR, and MR are similar to that caused by the variation in the Sr content.$^{663}$
Figure 30 Effect of oxygen partial pressure (a) and injection frequency (b) on electrical properties of LSMO films deposited on LaAlO$_3$ substrates at 825 °C. (c) electrical properties of films vs. the ratio of oxygen and vapor flow rates (calculated from the data of a and b). $R/R_{\text{max}}$ is resistance normalized to maximum value. Solution composition is $\text{La}_{0.6}\text{Sr}_{0.4}\text{Mn}_{0.63}$. Insets in a and b show the variation of $c$-parameter of LSMO lattice and FWHM of rocking curve for LSMO (200) reflection. Reprinted with permission Ref. 663.
4.2.4.3 Deposition of manganite thin films by sputtering

As mentioned in Section 3.3.3, sputter deposition is a simple tool for growing complex oxide films. Both dc and rf sputtering techniques are used for the growth of manganite films. Sputter deposition provides high deposition rates, uniformity of thickness and composition over a large area, and is compatible with the standard microelectronics technology. However, difference in sputtering yield of different target materials can lead to poor control over film composition. In addition, as-sputtered manganite films usually have been suggested to be oxygen deficient, which deteriorates their crystalline quality as well as electrical and magnetic properties. Therefore, post-growth annealing in oxygen atmosphere, which is a common procedure for many oxide film growth techniques, is especially important for sputtered manganite films. For example, Li et al. found that the Curie temperature and saturation magnetization of sputtered LSMO films increased, and coercivity dramatically decreased upon post-growth annealing in oxygen. The increase in conductivity, the Curie temperature, metal–insulator transition temperature, magneto-resistance, and saturation magnetization of LSMO upon annealing was reported by Sahu et al. The improvement of the magnetic properties of manganite films after annealing in oxygen is generally attributed to the increase in Mn$^{4+}$/Mn$^{3+}$ ratio due to oxygen incorporation into the lattice.

The growth of high-quality epitaxial manganite films was demonstrated by Casanove et al., who deposited the LSMO layers on (001)MgO and (001)SrTiO$_3$ substrates by rf magnetron sputtering. The crystal structure of the films was examined by x-ray diffraction and transmission electron microscopy. The LSMO layers were found to
be single-crystal, (001) cube-on-cube epitaxial with in-plane orientational relationship [100]LSMO//[100]substrate. The best magnetic properties were obtained for fully relaxed films. For the layers grown on MgO, relaxation of epitaxial strain was observed at the very first stage of the growth due to the large lattice mismatch (~8%), while full strain relaxation in the films grown on SrTiO₃ (misfit ~0.89%) was found to be favored by annealing and slow growth rate at high temperature.

RF magnetron sputtering has also been successfully employed for the growth of an La₀.₇Sr₀.₃MnO₃/SrTiO₃ superlattice with atomically flat interfaces. The superlattice was grown on a (001)LaAlO₃ substrate with a 60-nm-thick SrTiO₃ buffer layer. The growth was carried out at a temperature of 720 °C and pressure of 300 mTorr which was followed by annealing in oxygen. The final structure consisted of 12 pairs of alternating La₀.₇Sr₀.₃MnO₃ (76 nm) and SrTiO₃ (56 nm) layers with very sharp (<1 nm) interfaces between them. The high-resolution TEM image shown in Figure 31 demonstrates perfect epitaxial growth comparable to similar structures grown by PLD.

![Figure 31](image)

**Figure 31** High-resolution cross-sectional TEM lattice image of a LSMO/SrTiO₃ superlattice. Reprinted with permission Ref. 668.
4.2.4.4 Molecular beam epitaxy of manganite thin films

MBE is one of the best methods for growing high-quality thin films of complex compositions. In this technique, pure components of a compound are evaporated individually from effusion cells and then condense on a heated substrate surface, where they react with each other to form an epitaxial film of a desired composition. In contrast to the PLD and sputtering techniques, where the target composition is fixed, the flux of each component in MBE is controlled independently, which allows a fine control over the film composition. Due to low pressure in the growth chamber, MBE allows surface in-situ characterization by high-energy electron diffraction (RHEED) and sometimes Auger electron spectroscopy (AES). In addition, oxide films grown by MBE usually do not require post-growth annealing in oxygen despite a low oxygen pressure during the growth. However, MBE growth of oxide films is a challenge, because of oxidation of materials in effusion cells, as already mentioned in Section 3.3.6. Therefore, in spite of the numerous advantage of this technique, MBE is not widely applied to the growth of manganite oxides and the data in the literature are rare. Mercone et al. reported MBE growth of LSMO films on different substrates. In their work, Sr and Mn were evaporated from effusive cells, while La was delivered from an e-beam evaporation source due to its high melting point. A mixture of oxygen+5% ozone was used as an oxidizing agent. Atomic layer-by-layer molecular beam epitaxy (ALL-MBE) developed by Eckstein and Bozovic for high-temperature superconductors and other complex oxides has been applied to the growth of LSMO and LCMO thin films as well. With this method, layers with atomically flat surfaces and abrupt interfaces can be produced by deposition of one atomic layer at a time.
4.2.4.5 Deposition of manganite thin films by sol-gel technique

As mentioned in Section 3.3.1, the sol-gel process is an attractive method for depositing complex oxide thin films, due to its simplicity, excellent composition and thickness control, low cost, short fabrication cycle, and uniformity over large areas. Although widely used for the preparation of ferroelectric thin films, this method was found to be less desirable for manganites apparently due to inferior quality of sol-gel films compared to those grown by other techniques. The layers prepared by the sol-gel route are usually polycrystalline with the magnetotransport properties dominated by tunneling of spin-polarized carriers between grain boundaries and showing strong grain size dependence. For example, Yan et al. found that the resistivity of nanocrystalline La$_{0.7}$Sr$_{0.3}$MnO$_3$ films on Si(100) substrates fabricated by the sol-gel method is three-orders larger than that of an La$_{0.67}$Sr$_{0.33}$MnO$_3$ film grown by MOCVD. The high resistivity of the sol-gel layers was explained by the presence of grain boundaries acting as transport barriers. The temperature of the metal-to-insulator transition for the sol-gel films was found to be about 220 K, while the Curie temperature was about 365 K. The large difference between these temperatures (which are usually close for epitaxial films or single crystals) was also attributed to grain boundary effects. Low-field magnetoresistance due to tunneling of spin-polarized carriers between grain boundaries was observed in these films as well.

The data on epitaxial growth of manganite films by the sol-gel method are very few. Bae and Wang reported on the epitaxial growth of La$_{0.67}$Ca$_{0.33}$MnO$_3$ films on (001) MgO and (100) LaAlO$_3$ substrates by the sol-gel route. The stock solution was prepared by dissolving La, Ca, and Mn acetates with molar ratios La:Ca:Mn =
0.67:0.33:1 in 2-methoxymethanol followed by refluxing at 80°C for 24 hours after adding H₂O. Xerogel was finally obtained after aging the solution for several days followed by distillation and drying. To fabricate thin films, the sol-gel solution was spin-coated on MgO and LaAlO₃ substrates and immediately pyrolyzed at 400°C after each coating. The spin-coating was repeated several times to achieve film thickness of 700–1000 Å. Then the layers were annealed in oxygen at a temperature between 700 and 1000°C for 12 hours. The resulting La₀.₆₇Ca₀.₃₃MnO₃ films exhibited a magnetoresistance ratio of ~ 900%, a semiconductor to metal transition temperature of 225 K, and the Curie temperature of 228K.⁶⁷⁸

### 4.2.4.6 Influence of Substrates

Structural, electrical, and magnetic properties of manganite thin films may be considerably different from those of bulk manganites. The main factor determining crystallinity of thin films is lattice mismatch between a film and a substrate, which is usually defined as \((a_s - a_f)/a_s\), where \(a_s\) and \(a_f\) are in-plane lattice constants of the deposited film and the substrate, respectively. When \(a_s > a_f\) (positive mismatch), the film is under tensile strain. In the case when \(a_s < a_f\) (negative mismatch) the film is under compressive strain. When manganite thin films are deposited on the substrates providing low lattice mismatch, the films grow epitaxially, and their transport properties and magnetoresistance behavior are similar to those of bulk single crystals. The films deposited on highly mismatched substrates are usually polycrystalline, and exhibit different transport behavior due to the grain boundary effects.⁶⁷¹,⁶⁹⁹ ⁷⁰⁰ For example, studying the effect of crystallinity on magnetoresistance in epitaxial and polycrystalline
La$_{2/3}$Ba$_{1/3}$MnO$_3$ and La$_{2/3}$Ca$_{1/3}$MnO$_3$ thin films, Shreekala et al.\textsuperscript{699} found that magnetoresistance in epitaxial films exhibited field and temperature dependences similar to those for bulk single crystals and ceramics, with a magnetoresistance peak close to the Curie temperature. In contrast, the polycrystalline films showed either a monotonic increase or saturation of magnetoresistance with decreasing temperature. The field dependence in the polycrystalline films was also remarkably different. The anomalous behavior of the magnetoresistance in polycrystalline films was attributed to the spin-polarized transport across grain boundaries.

The properties of single-crystal, epitaxial films are strongly influenced by the choice of substrate due strain arising from the lattice mismatch between the film and the substrate as well as due to the difference in thermal expansion coefficients. Tensile or compressive strain distorts the perovskite lattice, thus affecting the orbitals responsible for the carrier transport in the mixed-valence manganites. The lattice distortion due to the mismatch strain can also result in phase transformation in thin films.\textsuperscript{701} The strain effects in manganite films has been widely studied, both experimentally\textsuperscript{685,702,703,704,705,706,707,708,709, 710,711,712,713,714,715,716,717,718,719,720,721} and theoretically.\textsuperscript{722,723} The most common single crystal substrates used to grow manganite thin films and their properties are presented in Table 4.\textsuperscript{234,702,724,725,726} The most popular substrates for epitaxial growth of LSMO films are SrTiO$_3$ and LaAlO$_3$, due to their commercial availability and low lattice mismatch with LSMO. The best quality epitaxial LSMO layers reported in the literature were grown on the aforementioned substrates.\textsuperscript{663,667,671, 700,727, 728,729}

**Table 4. Substrates most commonly used for growth of manganite thin films**
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Material</th>
<th>Crystal Structure</th>
<th>Lattice parameter (Å)</th>
<th>Thermal expansion coefficient ($\times 10^{-6}$/K)</th>
<th>Ref.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Bi$_4$Ti$_3$O$_12$</td>
<td>orthorhombic</td>
<td>$a=5.410, b=5.448, c=32.84$ Å.</td>
<td>$\sim 11$</td>
<td>234,726</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SrTiO$_3$</td>
<td>cubic perovskite</td>
<td>3.905</td>
<td>10.4</td>
<td>724</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LaAlO$_3$</td>
<td>rhombohedral</td>
<td>$a=3.788, \alpha = 90^\circ 4'$</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>724</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Si</td>
<td>cubic</td>
<td>5.43</td>
<td>$\sim 3$</td>
<td>725</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>YSZ</td>
<td>cubic</td>
<td>5.14</td>
<td>$\sim 10$</td>
<td>726</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NdGaO$_3$</td>
<td>orthorhombic</td>
<td>$a = 5.426$ Å, $b = 5.502$ Å, $c = 7.706$ Å</td>
<td></td>
<td>702</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MgO</td>
<td>cubic rocksalt type</td>
<td>4.216</td>
<td>10.5</td>
<td>724</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

A series of papers have been devoted to comparison of manganite films grown on various substrates. Yang et al. compared characteristics of La$_{0.7}$Sr$_{0.3}$MnO$_3$ films deposited on various substrates: single crystal LaAlO$_3$(001), SrTiO$_3$(001), MgO(001), SiO$_2$/Si(001), and amorphous quartz. The 300-nm-thick films were grown by off-axis magnetron dc sputtering at temperatures 700-800°C, depending on the substrate, all other conditions of the deposition and post-annealing being the same. XRD $\theta$-2$\theta$ scans shown in Figure 32 illustrate the dependence of the film crystallinity on the lattice mismatch. The XRD patterns for the LSMO grown on SrTiO$_3$ and LaAlO$_3$ substrates (Figure 32 a, b) contain only (00n) peaks, indicating that the films are c-axis oriented due to the low lattice mismatch. For films grown on MgO (Figure 32c), (011) and (111) peaks in addition to (00n) peaks appeared revealing that the film is less textured and polycrystalline. The preference for the {011} orientation was attributed to the smaller lattice mismatch between the {011} LSMO plane and {001} MgO (1%) as
compared to that for the \{001\} plane (7.8\%). For SiO$_2$/Si(0 0 1), the lattice mismatch of the \{001\} LSMO plane is further increased and the lattice mismatch of the \{011\} LSMO plane is further reduced. As a result, the \{011\} peak dominates the XRD pattern shown in Figure 32d. The film grown on the amorphous quartz substrate is polycrystalline, and all LSMO planes diffract (Figure 32 e).

![XRD patterns of LSMO films deposited on single crystals](image)

**Figure 32**

\(\theta-2\theta\) XRD patterns of the LSMO films deposited on single crystals of (a) LaAlO$_3$(0 0 1), (b) SrTiO$_3$(0 0 1), (c) MgO(0 0 1), (d) SiO$_2$/Si(0 0 1), and (e) amorphous quartz plate. Reprinted with permission Ref. 671.

Abrutis et al.\textsuperscript{663} compared properties of La$_{1-x}$Sr$_x$MnO$_3$ thin films deposited on perovskite (LaAlO$_3$, SrTiO$_3$, NdGaO$_3$) and non-perovskite (yittria stabilized zirconia YSZ(001), MgO(001), r-plane sapphire) substrates by MOCVD. The films grown on the
non-perovskite substrates were found to have a broader semiconductor–metal transition and lower $T_\rho$ values (~270, ~240, and ~210 K for films on YSZ, MgO, and sapphire, respectively, as compared to ~320 K for films on LaAlO$_3$). The inferior quality of the films on the non-perovskite substrates was attributed to incomplete epitaxy of the films on these more mismatched substrates rather than to strain effects, because the determined lattice c-parameter (~3.87 Å) did not indicate the presence of biaxial strain in the films.

Integration of the perovskite manganites with technologically important Si substrates remains a challenging task for potential integrated device/systems applications such as information processing and data storage. In addition to the lattice and thermal mismatch, chemical reaction with Si substrates has to be taken into account. Various buffer layers have been used to compensate for thermal and lattice mismatch and avoid interfacial reactions. For example, Pradhan et al. achieved epitaxial growth of La$_{0.7}$Ba$_{0.3}$MnO$_3$ and La$_{0.7}$Sr$_{0.3}$MnO$_3$ films on Si(100) and Si(111) substrates using SrTiO$_3$ buffer layers. Gao and Hu reported the fabrication of $p$-La$_{0.9}$Ba$_{0.1}$MnO$_3$($LMBO$)/$n$-Si heterojunctions, with ultrathin SrTiO$_3$ buffer layers inserted between La$_{0.9}$Ba$_{0.1}$MnO$_3$ and Si to avoid oxidation of the silicon surface. The obtained La$_{0.9}$Ba$_{0.1}$MnO$_3$ films, however, were not epitaxial, but were consisted of (110) and (111)-oriented grains. Bi$_4$Ti$_3$O$_{12}$ layers can be used as templates for deposition of La$_{0.7}$Sr$_{0.3}$MnO$_3$ on Si, because Bi$_4$Ti$_3$O$_{12}$ is ideally lattice matched to La$_{0.7}$Sr$_{0.3}$MnO$_3$ and shows high affinity for c-axis oriented growth on any substrates. Trajanovic, et al. reported on the growth of high quality La$_{0.67}$Sr$_{0.33}$MnO$_3$ films on Bi$_4$Ti$_3$O$_{12}$/YSZ-buffered (001)Si substrates. From relative ~45° shift of $\phi$ -scan peaks of the La$_{0.67}$Sr$_{0.33}$MnO$_3$ and Bi$_4$Ti$_3$O$_{12}$, the authors found that La$_{0.67}$Sr$_{0.33}$MnO$_3$ grew along the
diagonal of the underlying Bi$_4$Ti$_3$O$_{12}$ lattice, thus minimizing the lattice mismatch and allowing for almost strain free growth of the manganite film. The same group reported PLD deposition of La$_{0.7}$Sr$_{0.3}$MnO$_3$ layers on SiO$_2$/Si (100) substrates using Bi$_4$Ti$_3$O$_{12}$ as a template. In this case, both Bi$_4$Ti$_3$O$_{12}$ and La$_{0.7}$Sr$_{0.3}$MnO$_3$ layers were found to be $c$-axis oriented, but without any alignment in the $a$-$b$ plane, in contrast to the in-plane aligned LSMO films on Bi$_4$Ti$_3$O$_{12}$/YSZ(001)Si templates. These films exhibited a Curie temperature of 360 K which is comparable to that of an epitaxial LSMO film on LaAlO$_3$ substrates. However, the insulator-metal transition temperature was much lower ($T_\rho = 220$K), and the resistivity was several orders of magnitude higher than that for the epitaxial LSMO films. The difference in the transport properties between the textured La$_{0.7}$Sr$_{0.3}$MnO$_3$ films grown on the Bi$_4$Ti$_3$O$_{12}$/SiO$_2$/Si templates and the epitaxial films grown on LaAlO$_3$ substrates was attributed to spin tunneling through highly resistive grain boundaries present in the textured layers.

4.2.4.7 Influence of Layer thickness

Thickness is an important factor governing the electrical and magnetic properties of manganite films, because the mismatch stress induced by the clamping effect of the substrate is a strong function of the thickness. In general, the stress in epitaxial films increases with thickness and, after it reaches a critical value determined by film and substrate materials and growth temperature, strain relaxation proceeds in the films via introduction of defects at the interface. The effect of thickness on the manganite film properties has received much attention. The effect of thickness on magnetoresistance, insulator-to-
metal transition temperature, the Curie temperature, and coercive field have been revealed. As an example, the relation between film thickness and film properties was studied by Abrutis et al. for epitaxial La$_{1-x}$Sr$_x$MnO$_3$ thin films deposited on LaAlO$_3$, SrTiO$_3$ and NdGaO$_3$ substrates by MOCVD. The film thickness was varied from 8 to 300 nm. The LSMO films on SrTiO$_3$ substrates were under tensile strain, and those on LaAlO$_3$ and NdGaO$_3$ substrates were under compressive strain. From thickness dependences of the c-lattice parameter (Figure 33a), it was found that considerable strain present influenced properties only in very thin films (<60 nm). The films of thicknesses above ~100nm were completely relaxed. The semiconductor–metal transition temperature $T_\rho$ and magnetoresistance for the films on three different substrates showed pronounced thickness dependences in the thickness range from 0 to 60 nm, and were saturated in the range from 60 to 300 nm (Figure 33c and d).

Similar results were obtained by Wang et al., who studied the strain effects on the structural and magnetotransport properties of Pr$_{0.67}$Sr$_{0.33}$MnO$_3$ films epitaxially grown on LaAlO$_3$(001), SrTiO$_3$(001), and NdGaO$_3$(110) substrates that induced biaxial compressive, tensile, and almost no strain, respectively. The film thickness was varied from 4 to 400 nm. Wang et al. revealed two distinct thickness ranges with different thickness dependences of the magnetotransport properties. For thicknesses below 20 nm, the zero-field resistance peak temperature $T_\rho$ and the high-field magnetoresistance (HFMR) were found to be critically dependent on the thickness and the substrate due to the substrate-induced strain. For thicknesses above 20 nm, $T_\rho$ and the HFMR ratio showed weak thickness dependences. Okawa et al. reported that thick (200 nm) La$_{1-x}$Sr$_x$MnO$_3$ (x = 0.3 and 0.4) films showed metallic and ferromagnetic properties similar
to those of a bulk material with the Curie temperature $T_C = 370$ K, whereas thin (20 nm) films exhibit lower $T_C$ and insulator properties due to epitaxial strain appearing in the thinner layers.

**Figure 33**
Effect of film thickness on the properties of LSMO films deposited on perovskite substrates at 825 C. Reprinted with permission Ref. 663.

### 4.3 Device applications of mixed-valence manganites
The unique correlation between the structure, electronic, transport, and magnetic properties of the mixed-valence manganites makes them promising candidates for magnetoresistive read heads, magnetoresistive random access memory, spintronic devices, magnetic-field sensors, and infrared detectors operating at ambient temperature. Due to their high temperature coefficient of resistance (TCR), the mixed-valence manganites are promising for bolometric detectors. A bolometer is a device for detecting and measuring the energy of incident radiation. Therefore, a material for bolometric applications should possess high TCR, which allows small temperature variations caused by absorbed IR radiation to generate a significant voltage drop across the bolometer. Typical values of TCR of the manganites are 10%–15% over a temperature interval of ~10 K in the vicinity of the resistivity peak, which is better than that for VOx, a material commonly used for bolometer fabrication. Moreover, the manganite composition can be tuned so that the resistivity peak becomes closer to room temperature, which provides the possibility for ambient temperature operation.

In terms of other applications, hybrid structures consisting of high-temperature superconductor (HTSC) and mixed-valence manganite layers have been studied as potential candidates for use in spin-injection devices. These HTSC-CMR structures take advantages of the perfect structural and lattice match between superconducting and CMR perovskite oxides and the half-metallic nature of the manganites, yielding better spin polarization than typical metallic ferromagnets.

In the last decade, MTJs have been extensively studied as potential candidates for memory element and magnetic-field sensor applications. Employing half-metallic perovskite manganites in MTJs as electrodes makes such devices very promising.
Due to the high spin polarization of carriers, spin dependent tunneling between two ferromagnetic manganite electrodes across a thin insulating barrier should produce a very large MR response. For ideal half-metallic materials with 100% spin polarization, conductance is zero at $T = 0$ K in the antiparallel configuration and hence an infinite TMR is expected. A large TMR effect have been observed in LCMO,\textsuperscript{759,760,761} LSMO,\textsuperscript{583,762,763,764,765,766,767,768,769,770} and La$_{2/3}$Ba$_{1/3}$MnO$_3$--based MTJs.\textsuperscript{771} Table 5 compares the values of TMR and polarization for TMJs based on the manganites and few other ferromagnetic materials.\textsuperscript{772,773,774} As an illustration, Figure 34 shows the junction resistance vs. applied magnetic field for an La$_{0.7}$Ca$_{0.3}$MnO$_3$/NdGaO$_3$/La$_{0.7}$Ca$_{0.3}$MnO$_3$ junction obtained by Jo et al.\textsuperscript{759}. The measurements were carried out on a 6x6 µm$^2$ mesa at 77 K. The value of TMR, defined as $(R_{\text{high}}-R_{\text{low}})/R_{\text{high}}$ was found to be 86% with extremely sharp switching, where $R_{\text{high}}$ and $R_{\text{low}}$ are the high and low resistance states corresponding to antiparallel and parallel alignment of the magnetization of the two LCMO electrodes. Very large tunneling magnetoresistance up to 1200% was observed for La$_{2/3}$Ba$_{1/3}$MnO$_3$/SrTiO$_3$/La$_{2/3}$Ba$_{1/3}$MnO$_3$ trilayer structures grown on (001)SrTiO$_3$ substrates.\textsuperscript{771} However, the most promising results were obtained for LSMO electrodes. Bowen et al.\textsuperscript{762} performed magnetotransport measurements on La$_{2/3}$Sr$_{1/3}$MnO$_3$/SrTiO$_3$/La$_{2/3}$Sr$_{1/3}$MnO$_3$ magnetic tunnel junctions. A magnetoresistance ratio of more than 1800% is obtained at 4 K, from which a spin polarization in LSMO of at least 95% was deduced.

The main drawback of manganite electrodes from the standpoint of device application is that the large TMR effect observed at low temperatures vanishes even well below room temperature, which is definitely below $T_C$ of LSMO (360 K).\textsuperscript{583,760,762,770}
Figure 25 shows the temperature dependence of the TMR measured for an LSMO/STO/LSMO structure by Bowen et al. One can see that the value of TMR drops drastically with decreasing temperature and completely vanishes at about 280 K. At 250 K, the TMR ratio was found to be 30% (Figure 35c), and at 270 K the TMR ratio was only 12%. This decay in TMR is generally attributed to loss of the spin polarization at electrode/barrier interfaces. Indeed, deterioration of magnetic properties (lower $T_C$, smaller magnetization, reduction of the metallic character) is observed in manganites within a few nanometers from the manganite/insulator interface or the manganite surface. Such factors as separation into ferromagnetic metallic and nonmagnetic regions, distortion of the Mn-O-Mn bonds, spin canting in LSMO at the interface, and the loss of cubic symmetry at the surface have been considered as possible sources of weakening of ferromagnetism.

The large spin polarization of carriers, and consequently large TMR ratios, in the mixed-valence manganites makes them very attractive material for spintronics. Up to present, LSMO-based MTJs show the best figure of merit among the manganite-based tunneling structures. Unfortunately, the TMR ratio of these MTJs decays rapidly with temperature, vanishing completely well below $T_C$. For real applications, however, the high polarization should persist at room temperature. Therefore, there is a need for further search for half-metallic materials with higher Curie temperatures as well as improved quality of manganite/insulator interfaces.

Table 5  Tunneling magnetoresistance (TMR) and spin polarization (P) for various ferromagnetic heterostructures
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Magnetic material</th>
<th>Heterostructure</th>
<th>TMR (%)</th>
<th>P (%)</th>
<th>T (K)</th>
<th>Refs.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>NiFe, CoFe</td>
<td>Co/Al₂O₃/Ni₀.₈Fe₀.₂</td>
<td>&lt;24</td>
<td>&lt; 33</td>
<td>77</td>
<td>772</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Co/Al₂O₃/Co₀.₅Fe₀.₅</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Co, Fe, Ni</td>
<td>Co, Fe, Ni foil &amp; film</td>
<td>42 ~ 46.5</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>768</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NiFe</td>
<td>Ni₀.₈Fe₀.₂ film</td>
<td>37 ± 5</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>768</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NiMnSb</td>
<td></td>
<td>58 ± 2.₃</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>768</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CrO₂</td>
<td></td>
<td>90 ± 3.₆</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>768</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Co₂₀Fe₆₀B₂₀</td>
<td>Co₂₀Fe₆₀B₂₀/MgO/Co₂₀Fe₆₀B₂₀</td>
<td>472</td>
<td>804</td>
<td>RT</td>
<td>773</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Co₂MnSi</td>
<td>Co₂MnSi/amorphous Al oxide/Co₂MnSi</td>
<td>570</td>
<td>83-89</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>774</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LSMO</td>
<td>LSMO film</td>
<td>78 ± 4.₀</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>768</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LSMO</td>
<td>LSMO/STO/LSMO</td>
<td>81</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>579</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LSMO</td>
<td>LSMO/STO/LSMO</td>
<td>400-450</td>
<td>&gt; 82</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>769</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LSMO</td>
<td>LSMO/PrBa₂Cu₂ₓGa₀.₂O₇/LSMO</td>
<td>400-450</td>
<td>&gt; 82</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>769</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LSMO</td>
<td>LSMO/CeO₂/LSMO</td>
<td>400-450</td>
<td>&gt; 82</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>769</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LSMO</td>
<td>LSMO/STO/LSMO</td>
<td>1,850</td>
<td>&gt; 95</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>762</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LSMO</td>
<td>LSMO/STO/LSMO</td>
<td>540</td>
<td>92</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>770</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LSMO</td>
<td>LSMO/TiO₂/LSMO</td>
<td>140</td>
<td>64</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>770</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LSMO</td>
<td>LSMO/LaAlO₃ (LAO)/LSMO</td>
<td>301</td>
<td>77.₅</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>770</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>La₂/₃Ba₁/₃MnO₃</td>
<td>La₂/₃Ba₁/₃MnO₃/SrTiO₃/La₂/₃Ba₁/₃MnO₃</td>
<td>1200</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>771</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LCMO</td>
<td>La₀.₇Ca₀.₃MnO₃ /NdGaO₃/La₀.₇Ca₀.₃MnO₃</td>
<td>86</td>
<td>86</td>
<td>77</td>
<td>759,760</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Figure 34 Tunneling junction resistance versus applied magnetic field for La$_{0.7}$Ca$_{0.3}$MnO$_3$ /NdGaO$_3$ /La$_{0.7}$Ca$_{0.3}$MnO$_3$ junction. Reprinted with permission Ref. 759.

Figure 35 Temperature dependence of the TMR for two junctions: (a) 2x6 µm$^2$ and (b) 1.4x4.2 µm$^2$. Dashed lines are guides to the eye. (c) $R(H)$ loop at $T = 250$ K showing 30% TMR. Reprinted with permission Ref. 762.
5 Multiferroics

As discussed in the Introduction Section, magnetoelectric multiferroic materials exhibit magnetic and ferroelectric ordering (and coupling between them) in a single phase. Due to their unusual physical properties and fascinating underlying physics, the magnetoelectric multiferroics have attracted extraordinary scientific interest. In addition, the combination of magnetism and ferroelectricity makes them promising materials for multifunctional devices, and the magnetoelectric effect (i.e., a magnetic moment produced by an externally applied electric field or an electric moment produced by an externally applied magnetic field) provide additional degree of freedom in design of new devices such as tunable microwave passive components.

5.1 Brief history and basic properties of multiferroic materials

The first theoretical prediction of magnetoelectric effect in antiferromagnetic Cr$_2$O$_3$ is due to Dzyaloshinskii in 1959, which was shortly followed by the experimental observations of this effect, both electrically and magnetically induced. However, the magnetoelectric coupling coefficient of Cr$_2$O$_3$ has been found to be only $\alpha_M = \mu_0 \delta M / \delta E = 4.13 \text{ ps/m}$, which is really very small for any practical application. The discouraging results in Cr$_2$O$_3$ led to a search for alternative single phase compounds. Subsequently, the magnetoelectric effect in compounds such as boracites Ni$_3$B$_7$O$_{13}$I, FeB$_7$O$_{13}$Cl, and Mn$_3$B$_7$O$_{13}$Cl, Ti$_2$O$_3$, GaFeO$_3$, Gd$_2$CuO$_4$, Sm$_2$CuO$_4$, KNiPO$_4$, LiCoPO$_4$, LiNiPO$_4$, garnets such as YIG and (YBiPrLu)$_3$(FeGa)$_5$O$_{12}$, BaMnF$_4$, solid solutions such as PbFe$_{0.5}$Ta$_{0.5}$O$_3$ and PbFe$_{0.5}$Nb$_{0.5}$O$_3$,
orthorhombic manganites GdMn$_2$O$_5$,\textsuperscript{797} molybdate Tb(MO$_4$)$_3$,\textsuperscript{798} LiNiPO$_4$,\textsuperscript{799} hexagonal perovskite YMnO$_3$,\textsuperscript{800} monoclinic perovskite BiMnO$_3$,\textsuperscript{801,802} rhombohedral perovskite BiFeO$_3$,\textsuperscript{803,804} TbMn$_2$O$_5$ and TbMnO$_3$,\textsuperscript{805} hexaferrite Ba$_{0.5}$Sr$_{1.5}$Zn$_2$Fe$_{12}$O$_{22}$,\textsuperscript{806} spinel CdCrS$_4$,\textsuperscript{807} has been observed. Relatively large magnetoelectric coefficients were measured for LiCoPO$_4$ (30.6 ps m$^{-1}$ at 4.2 K),\textsuperscript{808} YIG films (30 ps m$^{-1}$ at very low temperatures),\textsuperscript{809} and TbPO$_4$ (36.7 ps m$^{-1}$ at 1.92 K).\textsuperscript{810} The first synthetic antiferromagnetic ferroelectric material Pb(Fe$_{2/3}$W$_{1/3}$)O$_3$ and its solid solutions (1-x)Pb(Fe$_{2/3}$W$_{1/3}$)O$_3$ - xPb(Mg$_{1/2}$W$_{1/2}$)O$_3$ was produced by Smolensky et al. in 1961.\textsuperscript{811} In this compound, diamagnetic Mg$^{2+}$ and W$^{6+}$ ions provide ferroelectricity, while $d^5$ Fe$^{3+}$ ion provides magnetic ordering. Since then, the number of newly synthesized magnetoelectric materials significantly increased to the point where there are some sixty members of such materials. It is interesting to note that almost all multiferroics are artificially synthesized materials except two of them – congolite Fe$_3$B$_7$O$_{13}$Cl \textsuperscript{812,813} and chambersite Mn$_3$B$_7$O$_{13}$Cl \textsuperscript{814}.

Multiferroic materials have various crystal structures. Smolenskii and Chupis\textsuperscript{815} divided them into four major multiferroic groups, although there are also some multiferroics with crystal structures not falling into these four groups.

(1) Compounds with perovskite crystal structure ABO$_3$, in which the B position is fully or partially occupied by magnetic ions. This group is the largest family, and the celebrated member of this family is bismuth ferrite BiFeO$_3$, which is considered perhaps the most promising multiferroic material due to high ferroelectric and ferromagnetic Curie temperatures. This class involves also
complex perovskite-like layered compounds with a general formula $A_{m+1}B_mO_{3m+3}$ where $A=$Bi, Ca, Sr, Ba, and $B=$Fe, Ti, Mo, Ni.

(2) Hexagonal-structure rare-earth manganites $RMnO_3$, where $R=$ Ho, Er, Tm, Yb, Lu, as well as $Y$ and Sc, which are good ferroelectrics with antiferromagnetic or weak ferromagnetic properties. Most studied member of this group is $YMnO_3$.

(3) Boracites, compounds of chemical formula $M_3B_7O_{13}X$, where $M$ is a bivalent metal ion ($M =$ Cr, Mn, Fe, Co, Cu, Ni) and $X=$Cl, Br, I, which are, as a rule, ferroelectrics and antiferromagnetics/weak ferromagnetics.

(4) Compounds with a general formula $BaMF_4$, where $M=$Mn, Fe, Co, Ni, Mg, Zn. This compounds exhibit pyro- or ferroelectric properties and are antiferromagnetic/weak ferromagnetic at rather low temperatures.

Some physical properties of known multiferroic materials at the time were summarized by Smolenski and Chupis in a review paper. Table 6 lists the most studied multiferroic materials with most recent physical properties. As seen from this table, most of the multiferroics reported so far are antiferromagnets without spontaneous magnetization, and most of the compounds have their Néel or Curie temperature far below room temperature. For now, only a few multiferroics are known to have magnetic and ferroelectric ordering above room temperature, one of which is bismuth ferrite $BiFeO_3$ with ferroelectric and magnetic ordering below 1100 K and 643 K, respectively. Although the mutual control of electric and magnetic properties is an attractive possibility,
the number of candidate materials is, therefore, limited, and the effects are typically too small to be useful in real applications.
Table 6 Multiferroic materials along with their physical properties

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Multiferroics</th>
<th>Space group</th>
<th>Crystal structure</th>
<th>Magnetic ordering</th>
<th>Electrical ordering</th>
<th>T_{N,M}, K</th>
<th>T_{C}, K</th>
<th>Ref.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>YMnO₃</td>
<td>P6₃cm</td>
<td>hexagonal</td>
<td>AFM</td>
<td>FE</td>
<td>70-80</td>
<td>914</td>
<td>816,817</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>YbMnO₃</td>
<td>P6₃cm</td>
<td>hexagonal</td>
<td>AFM</td>
<td>FE</td>
<td>87</td>
<td>983-993</td>
<td>787,818</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HoMnO₃</td>
<td>P6₃cm</td>
<td>hexagonal</td>
<td>AFM</td>
<td>FE</td>
<td>72</td>
<td>875</td>
<td>820</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TmMnO₃</td>
<td>P6₃cm</td>
<td>hexagonal</td>
<td>AFM</td>
<td>FE</td>
<td>86</td>
<td>&gt;573</td>
<td>787,818</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TbMnO₃</td>
<td>Pbmm</td>
<td>orthorhombic</td>
<td>AFM</td>
<td>FE</td>
<td>41</td>
<td>28</td>
<td>822,841</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DyMnO₃</td>
<td>Pbmm</td>
<td>orthorhombic</td>
<td>AFM</td>
<td>FE</td>
<td>~40</td>
<td>~19</td>
<td>823</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LaMnO₃</td>
<td>Pbmm</td>
<td>orthorhombic</td>
<td>AFM</td>
<td>FE</td>
<td>140</td>
<td>819</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BiMnO₃</td>
<td>C2</td>
<td>monoclinic</td>
<td>FM</td>
<td>AFE</td>
<td>105</td>
<td>723</td>
<td>801,824, 825</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BiFeO₃</td>
<td>R3c</td>
<td>rhombohedral</td>
<td>AFM</td>
<td>FE</td>
<td>643</td>
<td>1100</td>
<td>826,827, 828</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BiCrO₃</td>
<td>C2/c</td>
<td>monoclinic</td>
<td>AFM</td>
<td>AFE</td>
<td>109</td>
<td>420</td>
<td>829,830</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HoMn₂O₅</td>
<td>Pbam</td>
<td>orthorhombic</td>
<td>AFM</td>
<td>FE</td>
<td>~45</td>
<td>~39</td>
<td>831,832</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ErMn₂O₅</td>
<td>Pbam</td>
<td>orthorhombic</td>
<td>AFM</td>
<td>FE</td>
<td>~45</td>
<td>~39</td>
<td>831,832, 833</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TmMn₂O₅</td>
<td>Pbam</td>
<td>orthorhombic</td>
<td>AFM</td>
<td>FE</td>
<td>~45</td>
<td>~36</td>
<td>832,833</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TbMn₂O₅</td>
<td>Pbam</td>
<td>orthorhombic</td>
<td>AFM</td>
<td>FE</td>
<td>~45</td>
<td>~38</td>
<td>832,833</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DyMn₂O₅</td>
<td>Pbam</td>
<td>orthorhombic</td>
<td>AFM</td>
<td>FE</td>
<td>~42</td>
<td>~38</td>
<td>832,833, 834</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>YMn₂O₅</td>
<td>Pbam</td>
<td>orthorhombic</td>
<td>AFM</td>
<td>FE</td>
<td>~45</td>
<td>~41</td>
<td>832,833</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BiMn₂O₅</td>
<td>Pbam</td>
<td>orthorhombic</td>
<td>AFM</td>
<td>FE</td>
<td>39</td>
<td>~38</td>
<td>832,833, 835</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ni₃B₇O₁₃I</td>
<td>F4 3c (77 K)</td>
<td>cubic</td>
<td>orthorhombic</td>
<td>AFM</td>
<td>~120</td>
<td>&lt;64</td>
<td>786,836</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bₐ₀.₅Sr₁.₅Zn₂Fₑ₁₂O₂₂</td>
<td>R₃m</td>
<td>hexagonal</td>
<td>noncollinear</td>
<td>helical spin structure</td>
<td>FE under applied magnetic field</td>
<td>326</td>
<td>~130</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bi₂FeCrO₆</td>
<td>R3</td>
<td>rhombohedral</td>
<td>ferrimagnetic</td>
<td></td>
<td>between 600 and 800</td>
<td>above RT</td>
<td>838,839840</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

There has been some degree of debate regarding the origin of magnetoelectric coupling in multiferroic materials, because the notion implies coexistence of the...
ferroelectricity and magnetic ordering in the same material, even though the physical mechanisms underlying these two phenomena are different and tend to exclude one another. From first-principles calculations, Filippetti and Hill have found the fundamental role of $d$ orbital occupation in preventing or favoring the simultaneous presence of magnetic and electric polarization. In ferroelectric materials, spontaneous polarization is achieved by the small transition-metal cation at the center of the octahedron of oxygen anions being moved off the center position through distortion. In order for the distortion to occur, the $d$ orbitals in the direction of the electric polarization must be empty (so called $d^0$-ness). On the other hand, the magnetic spin polarization is achieved by the presence of partially filled $d$ states. Spin-polarization is meant to show the presence of any kind of local moments ordered either ferro- or antiferromagnetically. Therefore, the existence of ferroelectricity, requiring empty $d$ orbitals, is inconsistent with the occurrence of spin polarization which requires partially filled $d$ orbitals. It was concluded that some additional electronic or structural driving force would have to be present for magnetism and ferroelectricity to occur simultaneously in the same material. For this to take place, the $d^0$ rule must be broken which can occur if the particulars of the chemistry or structure create an asymmetric potential with a double potential well, in spite of the $d$ occupation of the magnetic cation, i.e. a new mechanism for ferroelectricity takes place. For example, in the hexagonal yttrium and rare-earth manganites, polarization originates from the buckling of the MnO$_5$ polyhedra accompanied by a displacements of $R$ ions. In BiMnO$_3$ and BiFeO$_3$, the asymmetry is caused by the Bi-O hybridization. It should be noted, however, that the detailed mechanisms of the magnetoelectric effect are
not yet completely understood and warrant further theoretical and experimental investigations.

Next in this section we will consider the properties of some of the most studied and most promising magnetoelectric multiferroic materials.

### 5.2 Bi-based perovskite oxides

#### 5.2.1 BiFeO$_3$

As stated earlier, BiFeO$_3$ (BFO) is one of the single phase multiferroic materials with high ferroelectric Curie ($T_c=830 \, ^\circ C$) and antiferromagnetic Néel ($T_N =370 \, ^\circ C$) temperatures that makes it attractive for magnetoelectric applications. For this reason there have been extensive studies of the structure and properties of bulk and thin film BFO. Bulk BFO has a rhombohedrally distorted perovskite structure ($a_{rh}=5.6343 \, \AA$ and $\alpha_{rh}=59.348^\circ$) with space group $R3c$. Figure 36 shows the structure of a primitive unit cell of BFO, which contains two formula units (ten atoms), arising from counter rotations of neighboring O octahedra about the [111] axis. The displacement of Bi, Fe, and O ions from their ideal positions along the [111] axis results in spontaneous polarization along [111]. BFO exhibits a G-type antiferromagnetic ordering, where the Fe magnetic moments are aligned ferromagnetically within the (111) planes and antiferromagnetically between the adjacent (111) planes. Bulk BFO exhibits also a spiral spin structure, where the antiferromagnetic axis rotates through the crystal with a long-wavelength period, superimposed on the antiferromagnetic ordering, of 620 Å, which cancels macroscopic magnetization leading to an extremely small saturation magnetization.
Today, there are several challenges facing BFO that must be overcome before this material can be considered suitable for practical applications. These challenges are i) high leakage current, ii) small remanent polarization, iii) high coercive field, and iv) inhomogeneous magnetic spin structure. Of these challenges, large leakage current is the most serious factor limiting the applications of BFO. The large leakage current is usually attributed to deviation from oxygen stoichiometry, which leads to the change in oxidation state of Fe ions (from Fe$^{3+}$ to Fe$^{2+}$) in order to compensate for the charge of oxygen vacancies. The coexistence of Fe$^{3+}$ and Fe$^{2+}$ causes electron hopping between Fe$^{3+}$ and Fe$^{2+}$ ions, oxygen vacancies acting as a bridge between them, which increases the leakage current. The inhomogeneous spin structure results from the spatially modulated, cycloidal spin structure with the periodicity of about 620 Å, which is incommensurate with the crystallographic lattice parameters. Several approaches have been proposed to overcome the spiral spin structure, among which are doping and...
formation of BiFeO$_3$-based solid solutions$^{858,859,860,861}$ and application of high magnetic field$^{858,862}$ and strain.$^{863,864}$

Until recently, the value of polarization in bulk BFO was considered to be small, with spontaneous polarization on the order of a few $\mu$C/cm$^2$ and non-saturated hysteresis loops.$^{828}$ However, epitaxial BFO films have attracted significant interest when strong multiferroic behavior together with large values of magnetization and electric polarization were reported by Wang et al.$^{863}$ in 2003. For BFO films epitaxially grown on SrTiO$_3$ substrates, they found very high spontaneous polarization up to 50-60 $\mu$C/cm$^2$, some one order of magnitude higher than that for bulk BFO, and a saturation magnetization of 150 emu/cm$^3$. The magnetization was stated to be dependent on the film thickness. The huge difference in the properties of the BFO films from the bulk material was attributed to the difference in the crystal structure of the thin films under investigation caused by the mismatch strain. It should be noted however that, although large polarization values for BFO films were also reported by other groups$^{865,866,867,868,869,870}$ Wang et al.$^{863}$ is the only group so far who reported such high values of magnetization, and the accuracy of the data as well as the mechanism of the enhancement of magnetization and polarization is still under discussion$^{871,872}$.

BFO layers were grown by all the conventional growth methods such as PLD,$^{863,865,866,867,873}$ MOCVD,$^{874,875}$ chemical solution deposition (CSD),$^{876,877}$ RF sputtering,$^{878,879}$ and sol-gel.$^{880,881}$ Epitaxial BFO films show much higher polarization values that bulk samples$^{865,866,867,868,870}$ which is consistent with theoretical considerations$^{851,869}$ and can be explained by improved crystal quality and stoichiometry, different structural modifications stabilized in the thin films$^{867,870}$ or within the modern theory of
Structural and physical properties of epitaxially grown BFO films were found to depend on ambient oxygen pressure during PLD growth. For example, Yun et al. have found that the crystal structure and lattice constant of BFO films depend strongly on the oxygen pressure. In this study, the BFO films deposited at various oxygen pressures were single phase with a tetragonally distorted perovskite structure, in spite of the fact that bulk BFO is known to be a rhombohedrally distorted perovskite. The $c/a$ ratio of the films decreased from 1.032 to 1.014 as the oxygen pressure decreased from 0.15 to 0.005 Torr. The tetragonal distortion in epitaxial BFO films is attributed generally to the mismatch strain, and the dependence of the $c/a$ ratio on the oxygen pressure was attributed by the authors to both the lattice strain and oxygen stoichiometry in the films.

Fujino et al. deposited BFO thin films by ablating a $\text{Bi}_{1.1}\text{FeO}_3$ target with a KrF excimer laser ($\lambda = 248\ \text{nm}$) at a typical fluence of $2\ \text{J/cm}^2$. The oxygen pressure during deposition was varied in the range from $10^{-4}$ to $10^{-1}$ Torr, and the substrate temperature was kept constant at 600 °C. Epitaxial BFO films with (001) orientation were obtained at oxygen pressures above $1 \times 10^{-3}$ Torr. Figure 37 shows the phase composition of the BFO films as a function of oxygen pressure. At low pressures ($< 2 \times 10^{-2}$ Torr), the $\text{Fe}_2\text{O}_3$ phase was found in the BFO films, and the portion of the $\text{Fe}_2\text{O}_3$ increasing as the oxygen pressure decreased. Pure BFO phase was identified by XRD for a pressure range from $5 \times 10^{-3}$ Torr to $5 \times 10^{-2}$ Torr. At high oxygen pressures ($> 5 \times 10^{-2}$ Torr), the $\text{Bi}_2\text{O}_3$ phase was observed, and the $\text{Bi}_2\text{O}_3$ content in the films increased with pressure.
Figure 37 Summary of phases present in BFO films as a function of oxygen deposition pressure as determined by XRD analysis. The sample color changes from yellow to red. Reprinted with permission Ref. 885.

Li et al. investigated the effect of the orientation of epitaxial BFO films on their remanent polarization. For this investigation, the (001)-, (101)-, and (111)-oriented films were grown by PLD on (001), (110) and (111) SrTiO$_3$ substrates, respectively. The BFO films grown on (111) substrates had a rhombohedral structure, identical to that of bulk single crystals; whereas the films grown on (101) or (001) substrates were monoclinically distorted from the rhombohedral structure due to the epitaxial constraint. The remanent polarization $P$ was found to be $\sim$55, $\sim$80, and $\sim$100 $\mu$C/cm$^2$ for the (001)-, (101)-, and (111)-oriented films, respectively. Figure 38 shows the values of $\sqrt{3}P_{(001)}$, $\sqrt{2}P_{(101)}$, and $P_{(111)}$ vs. electric field for the oriented films with different orientations. One can see, that the values of the projected polarizations are nearly equivalent, indicating that the axis of spontaneous polarization lies close to (111) for all orientations, and that the values measured along (101) and (001) are simply projections onto these orientations.
As mentioned above, one of the major problems limiting device applications of BFO is the large leakage current caused by coexistence of Fe$^{3+}$ and Fe$^{2+}$ ions, which in turn results from charge compensation of oxygen vacancies. According to the defect chemistry theory, doping of BFO with aliovalent ions should change the oxidation state of iron and the concentration of oxygen vacancies, paving the way for control over the leakage current in BFO. Qi et al. proposed to dope BFO with aliovalent Ti$^{4+}$ and Ni$^{2+}$ ions, which substitute for the Fe$^{3+}$ ions and are similar in size with Fe$^{3+}$. The authors have suggested that the charge compensation in the 4$^+$ cation-doped material can be achieved by one or more of the following mechanisms: filling of oxygen vacancies, decrease of cation valence by formation of Fe$^{3+}$, and creation of cation vacancies. On the other hand, charge compensation in BFO doped with 2$^+$ charged ions can be realized by creating oxygen vacancies or increasing cation valence by transformation of Fe$^{2+}$ to Fe$^{3+}$. Doping with Ti$^{4+}$ hence is expected to eliminate oxygen vacancies and possibly to
increase Fe$^{2+}$ content, whereas doping with Ni$^{2+}$ is expected to introduce more oxygen vacancies and to prevent the formation of Fe$^{2+}$. The performed experiments showed that, indeed, doping of BFO thin films with 2% Ti$^{4+}$ resulted in the increase in resistivity by more than three orders of magnitude. In contrast, doping with Ni$^{2+}$ reduced the resistivity by two orders of magnitude. Analysis of the $I$–$V$ characteristics indicated that the main conduction mechanism for pure and Ni$^{2+}$ doped BFO was space-charge limited, which was associated with free carriers trapped by the oxygen vacancies, while the field-assisted ionic conduction was dominant in the Ti$^{4+}$ doped samples. The lower resistivity of the Ni$^{2+}$ doped films was attributed to the higher concentration of oxygen vacancies and, consequently, higher density of free carriers. This have led authors to the conclusion that oxygen vacancies rather than Fe$^{2+}$ ions are responsible for the high conductivity of BFO.$^{886}$

The above mentioned approach was used by Chung et al.$^{877}$ to study the influence of Mn and Nb doping on the electrical properties of BFO films grown by the CSD method. They found that doping with Nb$^{5+}$ resulted in the increase of BFO film resistivity, while doping with Mn, which was partially in Mn$^{2+}$ state, resulted in the opposite effect, that is a decrease of resistivity, in agreement with previous results.$^{886}$ Increase of the electrical resistivity of BFO ceramics by approximately six orders of magnitude due to Nb doping was reported by Jun et al.$^{887}$ Singh and Ishiwara$^{888}$ have found a similar effect with Mn doping on BFO film resistivity. In their experiments, the leakage current density increased steadily with increase of the Mn concentration in the films. However, the breakdown characteristic of the films containing 3%–5% Mn was considerably improved so that at electric fields > 0.6 MV/cm the leakage current density for the doped films was
much lower than that for the undoped BFO. As a result, the BFO films doped with 5% Mn showed well saturated polarization hysteresis loops with a remanent polarization of 100 $\mu$C/cm$^2$ at the measurement frequency of 1 kHz.

In order to improve the ferroelectric properties of BFO thin films grown by chemical solution deposition, Kim et al.\textsuperscript{889} doped the films with Cr, which substituted for Fe in BFO. It was found that doping with 3% Cr considerably improved P-E hysteresis characteristics and reduced the leakage current by approximately four orders of magnitude. A large room temperature remanent polarization of 61 $\mu$C/cm$^2$ was observed for the Cr-doped films. The authors presumed that Cr in BFO thin film suppresses the formation of oxygen vacancies, thus decreasing conductivity of the films.

Doping with Ba also was proposed for improving magnetic properties of BFO. Wang et al.\textsuperscript{890} studied Ba-doped single-phase BFO ceramics with Ba content up to 25%. These samples exhibited ferromagnetism and ferroelectricity simultaneously at room temperature. The origin of spontaneous magnetization was explained by two possible reasons. One possibility is that Ba distorts the structure of BFO, changing the Fe–O–Fe bond angle, which results in the magnetization of Bi$_{1-x}$Ba$_x$FeO$_3$. Another possible explanation is that adding Ba$^{2+}$ ions in BFO requires charge compensation, which can be achieved by formation of Fe$^{4+}$ or oxygen vacancies. If Fe$^{3+}$ and Fe$^{4+}$ ions coexist in the lattice, their statistical distribution in the octahedral may also lead to net magnetization and ferromagnetism.\textsuperscript{858} Magnetoelectric coupling in Bi$_{1-x}$Ba$_x$FeO$_3$ was evidenced by the increase of the dielectric constant $\varepsilon_r$ with the applied magnetic field, as shown in Figure 39. Here, the magnetoelectric effect is defined as $[\varepsilon_r(H) - \varepsilon_r(0)]/\varepsilon_r(0)$. One can see that the dielectric constant increases with an increase of magnetic field, and the positive values of
the magnetoelectric effect are temperature dependent. At 300 K and $H=8$ kOe, the values of magnetoelectric effect are 0.8% and 1% for $x=0.15$ and 0.25, respectively. At 80 K, these values are 1.5% and 1.7% for $x=0.15$ and 0.25, respectively. The increase in the values of the magnetoelectric effect at low temperature was attributed to the increase of magnetic ordering, which strengthened the sublattice interaction.890

![Graph showing magnetic field-induced change in dielectric constant of Bi$_{1-x}$Ba$_x$FeO$_3$ ($x=0.15,0.25$) measured at 80, 120, and 300 K. Reprinted with permission Ref. 890.]

Doping of BFO with rare-earth ions substituting for Bi sites, such as La$^{3+}$ and Nd$^{3+}$, is also of great interest. As indicated earlier in Section 3.2.4, doping of Bi$_4$Ti$_3$O$_{12}$
with La$^{3+}$ and Nd$^{3+}$ cations suppresses the formation of oxygen vacancies due to the substitution of volatile Bi with the rare-earth cations, which enhances the ferroelectric properties of this material.$^{247}$ In La-doped BFO (Bi$_{1-x}$La$_x$FeO$_3$), substitution of Bi with La could also suppress the inhomogeneity of magnetic spin structure, stabilizing macroscopic magnetization of BFO, because orthorhombic LaFeO$_3$, the other endpoint of the BiFeO$_3$–LaFeO$_3$ solid solution, exhibits homogeneous antiferromagnetic order ($T_N=740$ °C).$^{891,892}$ These ideas spawned a number of investigations on the influence of La and Nd doping on polarization switching, ferroelectric reliability, and multiferroic properties of BFO films.$^{893,894,895,896}$

Zhang et al.$^{895}$ performed La doping of BFO ceramics in the concentration range from 5 to 40 % and found a transition from rhombohedral to orthorhombic phase near $x=0.30$. This phase transition was found to destruct the spin cycloid of BFO that resulted in enhanced magnetoelectric interaction and improved multiferroic properties of the Bi$_{0.7}$La$_{0.3}$FeO$_3$ ceramics with remanent polarization $2P_r = 22.4 \ \mu\text{C/cm}^2$ and magnetization $2M_r = 0.041 \ \text{emu/g}$. An increase of saturation magnetization with La concentration (varying between 0 and 15%) was observed also for La-doped BFO epitaxial films on SrRuO$_3$-buffered SrTiO$_3$ (001) substrates.$^{894}$ Capacitors fabricated in this work showed fatigue-free ferroelectric switching characteristics up to $4\times10^{10}$ read/write cycles at a frequency of 1 MHz. Similar effect of La doping on magnetization was reported by Lee et al.$^{893}$ for thin films grown on BaPbO$_3$/Pt/TiO$_x$/SiO$_2$/Si templates by rf-magnetron sputtering. Remanent polarization and dielectric constant of the La-doped BFO films were increased and polarization switching and the fatigue behavior of the BFO films were significantly improved due to La doping.
Different results were reported by Uchida et al.\textsuperscript{896} who observed continuous crystal anisotropy and Curie temperature degradation with increasing contents of La\textsuperscript{3+} or Nd\textsuperscript{3+} cations of BFO films. La- and Nd-substituted BFO films with chemical compositions of \((\text{Bi}_{1-x}M_x)\text{Fe}_{1.0}\text{O}_3\) \((x=0–0.15, \ M=\text{La or Nd})\) were fabricated on (111)Pt/TiO\textsubscript{2}/SiO\textsubscript{2}/(100)Si substrates using a chemical solution deposition technique. Polarization \((P)\)-electrical field \((E)\) hysteresis loop measured at 10 K revealed that the intrinsic remanent polarization of La\textsuperscript{3+-} and Nd\textsuperscript{3+-}substituted BFO films with \(x=0.05\) were 44 and 51 \(\mu\text{C/cm}^2\), respectively, smaller than that of an undoped BFO film (79 \(\mu\text{C/cm}^2\)), which was ascribed to the degradation of crystal anisotropy and the Curie temperature of the BFO crystals. However, in agreement with previous reports, the leakage current density of the BFO films at room temperature lowered due to the doping from approximately \(10^{-3}\) down to \(10^{-6}\) A/cm\textsuperscript{2}.

5.2.2 BiMnO\textsubscript{3}

BiMnO\textsubscript{3} is one of the few magnetoelectrics with ferromagnetic ordering\textsuperscript{897,898,899} (see Table 6). From the powder neutron-diffraction data collected at 20 K, dos Santos et al.\textsuperscript{900} revealed a collinear ferromagnetic structure with the spin direction along [010] and a magnetic moment of 3.2 \(\mu\text{B}\). The ferromagnetism in BiMnO\textsubscript{3} was attributed to the orbital ordering that produces three-dimensional ferromagnetic super-exchange interaction. BiMnO\textsubscript{3} has a monoclinic structure with unit-cell parameters \(a=59.5317(7)\) Å, \(b=55.6047(4)\) Å, \(c=59.8492(7)\) Å, and \(\beta=5110.60(1)^\circ\).\textsuperscript{900} The monoclinic structure of BiMnO\textsubscript{3} can be considered as a distorted perovskite structure, achieved by distorting and rotating the MnO\textsubscript{6} octahedra in the simple cubic perovskite structure.\textsuperscript{824} As for electric properties, BiMnO\textsubscript{3} is an insulator and ferroelectric below the ferroelectric Curie
temperature of 720–770 K. Dos Santos et al. demonstrated ferroelectric hysteresis loops at room temperature and below, but the value of polarization was found to be rather small (0.13 and 0.043 μC cm\(^{-2}\) at 87 and 200 K, respectively). The coupling between the ferroelectric and ferromagnetic orders in BiMnO\(_3\) was confirmed experimentally: Kimura et al. observed pronounced changes in the dielectric constant induced by the magnetic ordering as well as a strong magnetic field dependence of the dielectric constant near the ferromagnetic transition temperature.

The origin of ferroelectricity in BiMnO\(_3\) is, however, still under discussion. Until recently, this compound was believed to have non-centrocymmetric lattice structure with space group C2, which allows the existence of ferroelectricity. The off-center distortion responsible for the polar structure of BiMnO\(_3\) was attributed to stereochemical activity of the 6\(s^2\) lone pairs of electrons on the Bi\(^{3+}\) ions. However, several groups have reported theoretical and experimental studies indicating that BiMnO\(_3\) might crystallize rather in the centrosymmetric C2/c than in the noncentrosymmetric C2 structure, which is incompatible with ferroelectricity. Ferroelectricity in the centrosymmetric BiMnO\(_3\) structure was proposed to arise from local non-centrosymmetry or oxygen-deficient superlattice. Very recently, Yokosawa et al. have performed thorough selected-area electron diffraction (SAED) studies to gain further information on the symmetry of the BiMnO\(_3\) structure. In the SAED patterns, they observed \(h0l\) \((l=2n+1)\) and \(h0l\) \((h=2n+1)\) reflections, indicating the noncentrosymmetric long-range (space group C2) and short-range (P2 or P2\(_1\)) ordered structures, respectively. These reflections were not detected in structurally related BiScO\(_3\) and BiCrO\(_3\), indicating that these compounds belong to centrosymmetric C2/c. The authors concluded that the
noncentrosymmetric long-range ordered structure (C2) of BiMnO₃ is attributed not only to Bi³⁺ ions with lone electron pair, but also to Mn³⁺ ions, that is, to correlation between Bi³⁺ and Mn³⁺ ions.

As was sited above, Kimura et al.³⁰² observed the negative magnetodielectric effect in the vicinity of the magnetic transition in BiMnO₃. The effect was rather weak however, maximum 0.6% at 9 T. More recently, Yang et al.³⁰⁹ have suggested that the magnetoelectric coupling in multiferroic materials exhibiting a large difference in the ferroelectric and magnetic transition temperatures would be enhanced if one can bring the electric and magnetic transitions into the same temperature region. In BiMnO₃, as an example, magnetism and ferroelectricity originates from different sources: the ferromagnetic order is due to Mn ions, whereas the ferroelectricity is due to 6s² lone pairs of Bi³⁺ ions. For this reason, BiMnO₃ exhibits a large gap between the ferroelectric and ferromagnetic transition temperatures. In order to bring the ferroelectric transition temperature of BiMnO₃ close to the magnetic one, Yang et al.³⁰⁹ randomly replaced Bi ions with La ions. A Bi₀.₈La₀.₂MnO₃ thin film was deposited on a conducting (111) SrTiO₃ substrate by pulsed laser deposition. The Bi₀.₈La₀.₂MnO₃ film showed a broad ferroelectric transition below 150 K and ferromagnetic ordering below 110 K. The magnetization value for these films reaches ~230 emu/cm³ (1.6 µB per Mn ion), which is much lower than that for bulk BiMnO₃ (3.6 µB per Mn⁸₀¹). It is interesting that La substituting for Bi ions has an effect on the magnetic state of BiMnO₃ despite the fact that the replacement occurs in nonmagnetic ions. On the contrary, the value of polarization is much higher than that for the bulk material: 12 µC/cm² for the Bi₀.₈La₀.₂MnO₃ film as compared to 0.13 µC/cm² at 87 K for bulk BiMnO₃.⁸₀¹ The enhancement polarization in
Bi$_{0.8}$La$_{0.2}$MnO$_3$ was believed to come from uncanceled dipole moments in the vicinity of La ions and/or from strain in the film. The temperature dependence of polarization of the films shows two abrupt features: as the temperature decreases, the polarization increases sharply at ~150 K, slows down below 110 K, then again rises rapidly, and finally saturates. The increase in polarization at ~150 K obviously indicates the onset of ferroelectric ordering, while the second the abrupt increase is most likely related to the onset of magnetic ordering, since it occurs in the range of the rapid increase in magnetization. A correlation between the magnetic and ferroelectric degrees of freedom in Bi$_{0.8}$La$_{0.2}$MnO$_3$ is further confirmed by the magnetic field dependence of pyroelectric current.

5.2.3 BiCrO$_3$

As compared to its neighbors BiMnO$_3$ and BiFeO$_3$, little is known about BiCrO$_3$. Bismuth chromite was first synthesized by Sugawara et al. in 1968 and was reported to be antiferromagnetic below 123 K with a weak parasitic ferromagnetic moment. Accurate structural parameters of polycrystalline BiCrO$_3$ have been determined recently by Belik et al. from neutron diffraction data measured in a wide temperature range. It was found that above 420 K BiCrO$_3$ crystallizes in the orthorhombic system (space group $Pnma$) in the GdFeO$_3$-type structure. In the temperature range from 420 to 7 K, BiCrO$_3$ has a highly distorted perovskite-type structure of monoclinic symmetry (space group $C2/c$), with the lattice parameters $a = 9.4641(4)$ Å, $b = 5.4790(2)$ Å, $c = 9.5850(4)$ Å, and $\beta = 108.568(3)^\circ$ at 7 K.

From first-principles density functional calculations, BiCrO$_3$ was predicted to have a G-type antiferromagnetic ordering (in which each Cr$^{3+}$ ion is surrounded by
neighbors of the opposite spin).\textsuperscript{910} This prediction was confirmed experimentally based on neutron diffraction data.\textsuperscript{829} Figure 40 illustrates the magnetic structure of BiCrO\textsubscript{3}. Below the transition temperature, magnetic moments of Cr\textsuperscript{3+} ions are coupled antiferromagnetically in all directions, forming the so-called G-type antiferromagnetic structure. Four anomalies of magnetic origin were found near 40, 75, 109, and 111 K in BiCrO\textsubscript{3}.\textsuperscript{912}

As for electric properties of BiCrO\textsubscript{3}, antiferroelectric ordering was predicted theoretically\textsuperscript{910} and later observed experimentally on BiCrO\textsubscript{3} thin films.\textsuperscript{830} The first-principles density functional calculations performed by Hill et al.\textsuperscript{910} predicted a G-type antiferromagnetic ground state of BiCrO\textsubscript{3}, with an antiferrodistortive or antiferroelectric structural distortion, similar to that in PbZrO\textsubscript{3}. It was found that, like BiMnO\textsubscript{3} and
BiFeO₃, BiCrO₃ is unstable in the ideal cubic perovskite phase, and the structural instability is driven by the stereochemical activity of the Bi lone pair. Cr³⁺ ions, however, resist the off-center displacement and prefer to retain in the ideal octahedral environment.⁹¹⁰ To study ferroelectric properties of BiCrO₃ experimentally, Kim et al.⁸³⁰ grew epitaxial BiCrO₃ films on SrTiO₃ (001) substrates with SrRuO₃ bottom electrodes by pulsed laser deposition. Figure 41a presents the electric field dependence of dielectric constant εᵣ for a BiCrO₃ film measured at 10 kHz by decreasing and increasing the dc bias. The dependences show two distinct maxima around ±150 kV cm⁻¹ with a clear hysteretic behavior. The electric field dependence of polarization also reveals double hysteresis loop (Figure 41b). The polarization value for the BiCrO₃ film is relatively small, ~12 μC/cm² at a maximum applied field of 700 kV/cm. The small remanent polarizations at zero field was attributed to a small leakage current of the capacitor. The double hysteresis loops in the electric field dependences of the dielectric constant and polarization is a clear indication of antiferroelectric ordering in the BiCrO₃ film. The lack of off-center displacement of the Cr³⁺ ions, as predicted by Hill et al.,⁹¹⁰ was suggested to be responsible for the antiferroelectric rather than ferroelectric order in BiCrO₃.
Critical Reviews in Solid State and Materials Sciences 2010

Figure 41  (a) $\varepsilon_r$ and (b) $P$ vs electric field loops of a BiCrO$_3$ film capacitor measured at a temperature of 10 K (15 K) and a frequency of 10 kHz (1 kHz). The solid and dotted lines in Figure (b) are measured with increasing and decreasing the electric fields, respectively. Reprinted with permission Ref. 830.

5.2.4 Bi$_2$FeCrO$_6$

Baettig et al.$^{838,839}$ have predicted theoretically that the ordered perovskite compound Bi$_2$FeCrO$_6$ will exhibit properties far exceeding the properties of any known multiferroic material: a polarization of 80 $\mu$C/cm$^2$ along the [111] direction, a piezoelectric coefficient of 283 $\mu$C/cm$^2$, and a magnetization of 160 emu/cm$^3$ (2 $\mu_B$ per formula unit). Ferroelectric polarization in Bi$_2$FeCrO$_6$ is driven by the Bi lone pair, like in its parent compounds BiFeO$_3$ and BiCrO$_3$, and ferrimagnetism with a net magnetic
moment of $2 \mu_B$ per an Fe–Cr pair originates from the antiferromagnetic exchange interaction between $d^3\text{Cr}^{3+}$ and $d^5\text{Fe}^{3+}$ (with $5 \mu_B$ per Fe$^{3+}$ and $3 \mu_B$ per Cr$^{3+}$ in opposite directions). The structure of this material is very similar to that of BiFeO$_3$ with the $R3c$ symmetry, except that the Fe$^{3+}$ ions are replaced by Cr$^{3+}$ ions in every second (111) plane, which corresponds to a rocksalt ordering of the Fe and Cr octahedrals and reduces the symmetry to the space group $R3$. A number of attempts were made to prepare both a random BiFeCrO$_3$ solid solution and an ordered Bi$_2$FeCrO$_6$ compound experimentally. Kim et al. grew epitaxial films of disordered BiFe$_{0.5}$Cr$_{0.5}$O$_3$ solid solution on (001)SrTiO$_3$ substrates with SrRuO$_3$ bottom electrodes by pulsed laser deposition. The films were found to be ferroelectric with a 77-K remanent polarization as high as $60\pm1 \mu\text{C/cm}^2$ along the pseudocubic [001] direction. The magnetic ordering in the solid solution was however antiferromagnetic, in contrast with the expectations for the system with ordered Fe and Cr cations, where ferrimagnetism was anticipated. For epitaxial films of ordered Bi$_2$FeCrO$_6$, Nechache et al. reported ferroelectric and magnetic hysteresis at room temperature with a polarization of $2.8 \mu\text{C/cm}^2$ and a saturated magnetization of $0.26 \mu_B$ per unit cell. More recently, the same group has reported that the ordered Bi$_2$FeCrO$_6$ films undergo a magnetic phase transition between 600 and 800 K. The experimental value of saturated magnetization is low as compared to the expected theoretical value of $2 \mu_B$ per an Fe–Cr pair. Such value of magnetization can be explained by several reasons: (i) only partial ordering of Fe and Cr cations in the lattice, (ii) partial chemical disorder that generates an antiferromagnetic antisite contribution (Fe-Fe, Cr-Cr), and/or (iii) partial strain relaxation in the film resulting in a more distorted structure. Further investigations of structural, magnetic, and
electric properties of ordered Bi$_2$FeCrO$_6$ are needed; however, the results obtained so far clearly indicate that this compound is one of the rare high-temperature multiferroics.

5.3 Yttrium and rare-earth manganites $RMnO_3$

Rare-earth manganites with a general formula $RMnO_3$ ($R$ is a trivalent cation) crystallize in two structures, depending on the size of the $R^{3+}$ cation: hexagonal ($P63cm$) for $R=$Ho, Er, Tm, Yb, Lu, Sc, and Y, which have small ionic radii $r_{R^{3+}} < r_{Dy}$, and orthorhombic ($Pbnm$) for $R=$La, Ce, Pr, Nd, Sm, Eu, Gd, Tb, and Dy, which have larger ionic radii ($r_{R^{3+}} \geq r_{Dy}$). The Mn-O-Mn angle in $RMnO_3$ is approximately 180° which facilitates magnetic ordering via an indirect exchange interaction between the Mn$^{3+}$ ions through O ions. All $RMnO_3$ compounds exhibit antiferromagnetic ordering with the paraelectric-antiferroelectric transition temperatures ranging from 40 to 140 K. For the hexagonal perovskite manganites $RMnO_3$ ($R=$Ho, Tm, Lu, and Y), the ferroelectric Curie temperatures well above room temperature ($T_C =$570-990 K) with saturated polarization $> 5.6 \ \mu$C/cm$^2$ and the Néel temperatures in the range 73–124 K are reported. To the contrary, the orthorhombic manganites have the ferroelectric Curie temperature lower than the Néel temperature and very low remanent polarization ($<0.2 \ \mu$C/cm$^2$). The existence of ferroelectricity in these orthorhombic compounds was attributed to lattice modulation accompanied by the antiferromagnetic order.

Figure 42 shows a polyhedral representation of the high-temperature centrosymmetric (left panel) and the low-temperature ferroelectric (right panel) structure.
of hexagonal $R\text{MnO}_3$. The structure consists of close-packed layers of MnO$_5$ trigonal bipyramids linked by corners in the (001) planes. Each Mn$^{3+}$ ($3d^4$) ion is located in the center of the oxygen polyhedral and is surrounded by three in-plane and two apical oxygen ions. Along the hexagonal $c$-axis, the MnO$_5$ layers are separated by layers of $R^{3+}$ ions. Below the ferroelectric Curie temperature, the MnO$_5$ bipyramids undergo a collective rotation that leads to unit cell tripling, as shown in the right panel in Figure 42. The cooperative rotation of the MnO$_5$ bipyramids displaces the $R^{3+}$ ions along the $c$-axis, giving rise to ferroelectricity in the material with polarization direction along the $c$-axis. Below the Néel temperature, the magnetic moments of Mn$^{3+}$ are aligned on the $ab$ plane with a 120° structure, forming a triangular, geometrically frustrated network of antiferromagnetically coupled spins. Systematic studies of magnetic point symmetry of the $R\text{MnO}_3$ compounds were carried out by Fibig et al.

The structure of orthorhombic $R\text{MnO}_3$ compounds can be considered as an orthorhombically distorted cubic perovskite structure. The distortion from the ideal cubic structure arises from two sources. The first is the mismatch of the $R$-O and Mn-O equilibrium bond lengths which is adjusted by cooperative rotation of the MnO$_6$ octahedra. The rotation increases with decreasing $R$ ion radius. The second reason for the lattice distortion is a deformation of the MnO$_6$ octahedra due to the orbital ordering characteristic of the Jahn-Teller effect of Mn$^{3+}$ cations. The degree of orbital ordering slightly increases from La to Tb and then remains almost unchanged for the last terms of the series. Details of orbital and magnetic ordering in a series of orthorhombic $R\text{MnO}_3$ compounds have been studied by Tachibana et al. and Kimura et al. as a function of the $R$ ionic radius.
Critical Reviews in Solid State and Materials Sciences 2010

Figure 42
High-temperature centrosymmetric (left) and low-temperature ferroelectric structure (right) of hexagonal RMnO₃. In the low-temperature structure the oxygen polyhedra undergo a collective rotation that leads to a unit cell tripling. This unit cell tripling is accompanied by displacements of the R cations (spheres) along the (0001) directions which lead to an electric dipole moment. Reprinted with permission Ref. 845.

It should be mentioned that pressure, strain, or special synthesis conditions can convert the hexagonal structure to the denser orthorhombic perovskite phase and, vise versa hexagonal structure can be stabilized under certain conditions.⁹²⁴, ⁹²⁹, ⁹³¹, ⁹³², ⁹³³, ⁹³⁴, ⁹³⁵ Since the hexagonal RMnO₃ compounds exhibit ferroelectricity at room temperature, realization of a metastable hexagonal phase for orthorhombic RMnO₃ (R=Ho, Tb, Dy, Gd, Sm, Eu) has been the subject of many papers.⁹³⁵, ⁹³⁶, ⁹³⁷, ⁹³⁸, ⁹³⁹, ⁹⁴⁰ The difference between the formation energies of the orthorhombic and the hexagonal RMnO₃ phases is sufficiently small that allows the growth of thin films of the orthorhombic manganites in a metastable hexagonal phase, which does not exist in the bulk form. Epitaxial stabilization of some metastable compounds was realized using various substrates,
including MgO,\textsuperscript{936} yttria-stabilized zirconia (YSZ),\textsuperscript{937,938,939} Pt(111)/Al\textsubscript{2}O\textsubscript{3}(0001),\textsuperscript{928} and Y\textsubscript{2}MnO\textsubscript{3},\textsuperscript{939} whose surface atomic arrangements ensured the hexagonal symmetry of epitaxially grown films. Balasubramaniam et al.\textsuperscript{939} have grown single-phase hexagonal $R$MnO\textsubscript{3} ($R$=Dy, Gd, Sm) films on (110)-oriented of single-crystal hexagonal Y\textsubscript{2}MnO\textsubscript{3} using PLD. The films were stable against back transformation to the perovskite structure up to a thickness of at least 50 nm. Lee et al.\textsuperscript{928} also demonstrated 50-nm-thick hexagonal DyMnO\textsubscript{3} films grown epitaxially on Pt(111), Al\textsubscript{2}O\textsubscript{3}(0001), and (111) YSZ substrates, which have in-plane hexagonal symmetry. The ferroelectric properties of these films were significantly enhanced compared to those of the bulk orthorhombic DyMnO\textsubscript{3}. The polarization hysteresis loop revealed the existence of ferroelectricity below 70 K (compared to 28 K for orthorhombic DyMnO\textsubscript{3}), with remanent polarization of 2.2 $\mu$C/cm\textsuperscript{2} at 25 K, which was an order of magnitude higher than the value for the bulk orthorhombic material. In addition, the hexagonal DyMnO\textsubscript{3} films also revealed an antiferroelectric-like signature above 70 K and spin-glass-like magnetic behavior, which was likely to arise from the geometric frustration of antiferromagnetically coupled Mn spins with an edge-sharing triangular lattice. The antiferromagnetic Néel temperature of the hexagonal DyMnO\textsubscript{3} films was found to be around 60 K, while the temperature of spin reorientation transition to be around 40 K.

5.3.1 Y\textsubscript{2}MnO\textsubscript{3}

Being originally considered as a promising ferroelectric, Y\textsubscript{2}MnO\textsubscript{3} is the most studied member of the hexagonal $R$MnO\textsubscript{3} group. Y\textsubscript{2}MnO\textsubscript{3} has been the main subject of theoretical first-principles studies of the fundamental physical properties the $R$MnO\textsubscript{3} compounds, since the empty 4f shell of the Y$^{3+}$ ion makes Y\textsubscript{2}MnO\textsubscript{3} a convenient system.
for application of the pseudopotential-based methods.\textsuperscript{33,845} In addition to being fundamentally important, YMnO$_3$ has attracted a good deal of interest as a multiferroic material for applications in magnetic storage media and spintronics, since the electrical and magnetic orders in YMnO$_3$ were shown to be coupled.\textsuperscript{800,817,941} The coupling was found to originate from an interaction between magnetic and electric domain walls.\textsuperscript{800} YMnO$_3$ has an antiferromagnetic Néel temperature of 80 K and a ferroelectric Curie temperature of 914 K.\textsuperscript{817,920} As discussed above, the $R$MnO$_3$ compounds can crystallize either in orthorhombic or in hexagonal structure, depending on the $R$ ionic radius. Y has the intermediate ionic radius and is hexagonal under ambient conditions,\textsuperscript{942} but the orthorhombic structure can be stabilized by low-temperature,\textsuperscript{932} high-pressure synthesis conditions,\textsuperscript{933,934} or under compressive epitaxial strain in thin films.\textsuperscript{931,943,944,945}

A number of studies have been devoted to doping YMnO$_3$ with the aim to modify its structural, electric and magnetic properties.\textsuperscript{847,946,947,948,949,950,951,952,953} Katsufuji et al.\textsuperscript{847} investigated the effects of Zr doping into the $R$ site in the hexagonal $R$MnO$_3$ compounds ($R$=Y, Lu, Sc) and found that Zr doping drastically suppresses both the ferroelectric distortion and magnetic ordering. Substitution of Fe at the Mn sites was found to increase the Néel temperature of the compound.\textsuperscript{817,946,947} Ga doping of the hexagonal $R$MnO$_3$ ($R$=Y and Ho) compounds was demonstrated to increase the ferroelectric Curie temperature while decreasing the Néel temperature.\textsuperscript{949} Iliev et al.\textsuperscript{951} studied the structural, magnetic and electrical properties of orthorhombic $Y_{1-x}Ca_xMnO_3$ ($0 \leq x \leq 0.5$) depending of the Ca concentration, $x$. The structure of this compound remained orthorhombic in the entire substitutional range. It was found that the average magnetic exchange interaction changed from antiferromagnetic for $x < 0.08$ to
ferromagnetic for $x > 0.08$. In order to reduce the growth temperature of YMnO$_3$ films and suppress the interfacial reactions and interdiffusion, Choi et al.\textsuperscript{953} doped YMnO$_3$ with Bi at Y sites. They have found that Bi doping leads to formation of a very thin Bi oxide layer at the surface of growing films which results in enhanced surface mobility of adatoms and thereby reduced growth temperature by more than 150 °C from the typical growth temperature of YMnO$_3$ films (>800 °C).

For device applications, preparation of YMnO$_3$ in the form of thin films is required. A number of reports have been devoted to the growth of YMnO$_3$ films by various techniques, such as MBE,\textsuperscript{954,955} PLD,\textsuperscript{956,957,958,959,960,961,962} sputtering,\textsuperscript{963,964,965} and chemical deposition.\textsuperscript{966,967,968} Various substrates have been used to achieve epitaxial growth of YMnO$_3$. Single-crystal hexagonal films were grown on (111) MgO,\textsuperscript{969} ZnO:Al/(0001) sapphire,\textsuperscript{969} (111)Pt/(0 0 0 1) sapphire,\textsuperscript{955,959,962} (111)Y$_2$O$_3$/(111)Si,\textsuperscript{955,959} (111)Y-stabilized ZrO$_2$,\textsuperscript{970} and wurtzite GaN/AlN/6H-SiC(001).\textsuperscript{961} However, as mentioned above, compressive stress can bring YMnO$_3$ into the undesirable non-ferroelectric orthorhombic phase. For example, YMnO$_3$ films epitaxially grown on SrTiO$_3$ substrates were found to be orthorhombic due to large in-plane compressive strain in the films.\textsuperscript{945,970}

Multiferroic behavior of YMnO$_3$ films has been recently demonstrated.\textsuperscript{960,962,971,972} Dho and Blamire\textsuperscript{960} investigated the dual ferroelectric-antiferromagnetic functionality of YMnO$_3$ films grown on (111)Si with a native oxide and found that ferroelectric and magnetic properties depended on the YMnO$_3$ crystal orientation. The PLD-grown YMnO$_3$ films obtained in this work exhibited a single-phase
hexagonal structure, with the film texture being strongly dependant on the oxygen pressure during the deposition. YMnO$_3$ films grown at 10 mTorr were predominantly (0001) oriented, while those grown at 0.1 mTorr were (11 2 1) oriented. The (0001)-oriented YMnO$_3$ films displayed small coercivity and zero exchange bias, while the (11 2 1)-oriented YMnO$_3$ layers exhibited relatively large values of coercivity and exchange bias. Such a large variation in exchange bias with orientation was attributed to the difference in the Mn–Mn spin coupling strength with direction in the hexagonal structured YMnO$_3$. The Mn–Mn distance along the $c$-axis direction (~6.07 Å) is much longer than that in the $ab$ plane (~3.55 Å). This implies that the interplane Mn–Mn spin coupling is much smaller than the intra-plane Mn–Mn spin coupling. Thus, the (0001)-oriented YMnO$_3$ films were found to be optimal for ferroelectric applications but unfavorable for magnetic applications. This result indicates that simultaneous utilization of the dual functionality of YMnO$_3$ may indeed be very challenging.

5.4 RMn$_2$O$_5$

RMn$_2$O$_5$ (R = rare earth or La, Y, Bi) compounds have attracted great interest after the multiferroic properties and colossal magnetoresistance effect had been discovered in these materials. At room temperature, all members of this family exhibit the orthorhombic structure, space group $Pbam$. Mn in RMn$_2$O$_5$ exists in two oxidation states, Mn$^{3+}$ and Mn$^{4+}$ each of which occupies different crystallographic sites. Each Mn$^{3+}$ is coordinated to five oxygen ions located at the apexes of a distorted square-base pyramid, while each Mn$^{4+}$ ion has octahedral oxygen coordination. Each R$^{3+}$ ion is surrounded by eight oxygen atoms. The size of all three kinds of coordination polyhedron
Critical Reviews in Solid State and Materials Sciences 2010

decreases gradually as R radius decreases. Figure 43 presents a polyhedral representationof the RMn2O5 structure, which can be considered as consisting of infinite chains of Mn4+O6 octahedra which shares edges along the c axis and linked together by Mn3+O5 and RO8 units.

Figure 43 Projection of the RMn2O5 structure, approximately along the c axis. Octahedra and tetragonal pyramids correspond to MnO6 and Mn2O5 units, respectively. The structure is orthorhombic (space group Pbam). Reprinted with permission Ref. 835.

According to neutron diffraction studies, RMn2O5 compounds have a complex antiferromagnetic structure with magnetic moments of Mn3+ and Mn4+ ions forming a helical magnetic ordering below the Néel temperature. The specific lattice geometry of the Mn sublattices and competing magnetic interactions between Mn3+ and Mn4+ as well as R3+ magnetic moments leads to complex magnetic structure characterized by a highly frustrated spin system. The helical spin ordering was noted to break the inversion symmetry and stabilize ferroelectric order in the lattice. As a result, ferroelectric order in RMn2O5 is very sensitive to an applied magnetic field. At room temperature, these compounds are paramagnetic and paraelectric, and they undergo multiple magnetic and ferroelectric phase transitions upon cooling. First, long-range
Incommensurate magnetic ordering occurs at \( T_{N1} = 40–43 \text{ K} \). At \( T_{C1} \approx 38–40 \text{ K} \), a lock-in transition of the magnetic ordering into a commensurate type takes place, which coincides with the onset of ferroelectric polarization along the \( b \) axis.\(^{905,984}\) At \( T_{C2} \approx 13–18 \text{ K} \), another sharp change in the polarization is observed which coincides with the unlocking of the commensurate order into another incommensurate magnetic order. This low-temperature phase was attributed also to a new excitation referred to as electromagnons.\(^{985}\) And finally, ordering of rare-earth spins below 10 K takes place.

Figure 44 shows the electric and magnetic phase transitions in the \( \text{RMn}_2\text{O}_5 \) compounds summarized by Kimura et al.\(^{833}\) As before, PE, FE, and X (X’) stand for paraelectric, ferroelectric, and unidentified dielectric phases, respectively. Note that although the phase diagrams vary from one to another \( \text{RMn}_2\text{O}_5 \) compound, ferroelectricity is observed only in commensurate magnetic phases, indicating close relation between the magnetic-structure periodicity and the spontaneous electric polarization.\(^{833}\)
Figure 44 Dielectric and magnetic phase diagrams as a function of temperature for \( R_{\text{Mn2O5}} \) compounds, which contain PE (ParaElectric), FE (FerroElectric), X (undidentified), and X’ (undidentified, but different from X) phases, and also contain PM (ParaMagnetic), HT-ICM (High Temperature-Incommensurate Magnetic), 1DICM (1 Dimensionally modulated Incommensurate Magnetic), CM (Commensurate Magnetic), LT-2DICM/LT-2DICM’ (Low Temperature-2Dimensionally modulated Incommensurate Magnetic), and LT-1DICM (Low Temperature 1Dimensionally modulated Incommensurate Magnetic) phases for the magnetic phase. After Ref. 833.

The most complex phase diagram was observed for DyMn\(_2\)O\(_5\) with five subsequent transitions upon decreasing temperature in zero magnetic field.\(^{986,987}\) All phase transitions were signified by distinct changes in temperature dependences of the dielectric constant \( \varepsilon(T) \) and/or the ferroelectric polarization \( P(T) \) (Figure 45).
difference between the cooling and warming data in Figure 45 indicates that several phase transitions exhibit thermal hysteresis. As seen from the figure, below $T_{N1} = 43$ K the antiferromagnetic order of the Mn spins sets in ($M$ phase with incommensurate magnetic order). At $T_{C1} = 39.6$ K a magnetic lock-in transition into an antiferromagnetic phase takes place, and the ferroelectric polarization arises. At $T_{N2} = 27$ K a sharp increase in $\varepsilon(T)$ and a change of the $P(T)$ curve slope is observed. Such a sharp increase of $\varepsilon(T)$ and a significant drop of $P(T)$ at $T_{C2} = 14$ K (18 K upon heating) are indicative of the unlocking of the commensurate order and transitioning it into an incommensurate phase. At $T_{C3} = 6$ K (8 K upon heating), the $\varepsilon(T)$ dependence show a step-like decrease and the polarization drops to zero due to a re-entrant transition into a low-temperature paraelectric phase with the appearance of the commensurate order of Dy-moments.

![Figure 45](image.png)

**Figure 45** Cascade of phase transitions in DyMn$_2$O$_5$ determined by measurements of the dielectric constant (a) and the ferroelectric polarization (b). Large temperature hysteresis was observed below $T_{C2}$. Cooling and heating data are shown by open and closed symbols, respectively. Reprinted with permission Ref. 987.
As seen from Figure 45, the magnetic phase transitions in the multiferroic material manifest themselves as distinct anomalies of the dielectric constant (magnetodielectric effect) which is a clear indication of strong magnetoelectric coupling due to significant spin–lattice coupling. For some materials, the relative change of the dielectric constant $\Delta\varepsilon/\varepsilon_0$ can reach considerably large values such as tens and even hundreds of percent. For example, Hur et al. discovered the colossal magnetodielectric (CMD) effect in TbMn$_2$O$_5$, DyMn$_2$O$_5$, and HoMn$_2$O$_5$ single crystals. The values of $\Delta\varepsilon/\varepsilon_0$ were found to be 22% and 40% near $T_N$ for TbMn$_2$O$_5$ and HoMn$_2$O$_5$ respectively, while this value for DyMn$_2$O$_5$ was as high as 109% at 3 K. For DyMnO$_3$ and CdCr$_2$S$_4$, giant values of $\Delta\varepsilon/\varepsilon_0$ up to 500% were reported.

A dramatic enhancement of the electric polarization under pressure was reported by dela Cruz et al. for $RMn_2O_5$ ($R=$Tb, Dy, Ho) compounds. It is interesting to note that application of pressure was found to have the same effect on the ferroelectric phase stability as magnetic field along the easy magnetization axis. It was argued that, while the magnetic field changes the magnetic structure by aligning spins with applied field, pressure directly changes the interatomic distances and bond angles in the lattice, thus affecting the exchange coupling constant. Complete $p$-$T$ phase diagrams were constructed for $RMn_2O_5$ ($R=$Tb, Dy, Ho); however, further experimental and theoretical studies are needed for a deeper understanding of the pressure effect on the phase transitions in $RMn_2O_5$ multiferroics.

Another member of the $RMn_2O_5$ family is BiMn$_2$O$_5$. Detailed studies of the structural, magnetic, and magnetoelastic properties of this compound have been recently
performed. The main peculiarity of the BiMn$_2$O$_5$ structure is that the BiO$_8$ units are much more distorted than the RO$_8$ units in other RMn$_2$O$_5$ compounds due to the presence of an electronic lone pair on Bi$^{3+}$. BiMn$_2$O$_5$ is magnetically ordered below $T_N=39$ K. The magnetic structure of this compound is also different: BiMn$_2$O$_5$ is the only member of the RMn$_2$O$_5$ family that exhibits no transitions to incommensurate magnetic order and therefore is ferroelectric in the whole temperature range below $T_N$. The BiMn$_2$O$_5$ magnetic structure is defined by the commensurate propagation vector $\mathbf{k}(1/2,0,1/2)$, whereas the magnetic structure is incommensurate along the $c$ axis, with $\mathbf{k}(1/2,0,\tau)$ for the other RMn$_2$O$_5$ compounds. Figure 46 shows the component of the magnetic propagation vector along the $c$ axis, $k_c$, as a function of the ionic radius. The values of $k_c$ are low for the smaller rare-earth ions, because the smaller the $R^{3+}$ cation is, the shorter the Mn$^{4+}$-O distance is, and, therefore, the stronger the direct antiferromagnetic interaction is between the Mn$^{4+}$ planes along the chains of Mn$^{4+}$O$_6$ octahedra. In BiMn$_2$O$_5$, the Mn$^{4+}$-O distance is larger than in any other RMn$_2$O$_5$ compounds, which results in a weaker direct antiferromagnetic coupling along the chains. Thus, the indirect Mn$^{4+}$-O-Mn$^{3+}$-O-Mn$^{4+}$ interaction (i.e., the coupling between Mn$^{4+}$ neighbors via bridging Mn$^{3+}$ cations) predominates in BiMn$_2$O$_5$ in such a way that the final coupling between the Mn$^{4+}$ planes separated by the Mn$^{3+}$ planes is purely ferromagnetic. The commensurability of the structure is directly related to this pure ferromagnetic interaction. In other RMn$_2$O$_5$ compounds, the moments of the Mn$^{4+}$ couples form a certain non-zero angle, implying the incommensurability of the magnetic structure.
Figure 46
Evolution of the $k_z$ component of the propagation vector $\mathbf{k}(1/2,0,k_z)$ as a function of the $R^{3+}$ ionic radius (in eightfold coordination) for the $RMn_2O_5$ family. Reprinted with permission Ref. 835 Ionic radii are taken from Ref. 991 and $k_z$ from Refs. 976, 977, 978, 992.

Since the magnetoelectric coupling in $RMn_2O_5$ takes place at very low temperatures, efforts have been made to improve the multiferroic properties of these materials by doping. For example, Munoz et al. synthesized a new oxide material $YFeMnO_5$ by substituting Fe ions into Mn sites in the parent $YMn_2O_5$ compound. $YFeMnO_5$ was found to be isostructural with $RMn_2O_5$ oxides, containing infinite chains of $Mn^{4+}O_6$ octahedra sharing edges, which were linked together by $Fe^{3+}O_5$ pyramids and $YO_8$ units. A certain level of disorder was found between the Mn and Fe metallic positions in that about 5% of Mn cations were replaced by Fe and vice versa. It has been demonstrated that $YFeMnO_5$ exhibits ferrimagnetic order below 165 K. Substitution of Ce for Bi ions in $BiMn_2O_5$ was found to result in transformation of the
antiferromagnetic phase of BiMn$_2$O$_5$ with a Néel temperature of about 42 K to ferromagnetic phase of Bi$_{0.9}$Ce$_{0.1}$Mn$_2$O$_5$ with a Curie temperature of about 46 K. Besides, the permittivity of Bi$_{0.9}$Ce$_{0.1}$Mn$_2$O$_5$ was found to be much higher than that of BiMn$_2$O$_5$. The authors proposed the following mechanism for the change of the magnetic ordering from the antiferromagnetic to the ferromagnetic one. When Ce is introduced into the lattice, Ce$^{4+}$ ions occupy a portion of the Bi$^{3+}$ sites, the excess electrons make some Mn ions change the electronic state from $t_{2g}^3 e_g^0$ Mn$^{4+}$ into a $t_{2g}^3 e_g^1$ Mn$^{3+}$ and induce a partially filled electron band, which weakens the direct Mn$^{4+}$–O–Mn$^{4+}$ super exchange interaction and, therefore, the antiferromagnetic coupling between Mn$^{4+}$ ions. In addition, the double exchange interaction of the bridge Mn$^{3+}$–O–Mn$^{4+}$ could be activated, thus making Bi$_{0.9}$Ce$_{0.1}$Mn$_2$O$_5$ ferromagnetic. Shim et al. prepared YMn$_{2-x}$(Fe,Co)$_x$O$_{5-\delta}$ (0.0$\leq x \leq$ 1.0) compounds via the sol-gel process and studied their structural, electrical, and magnetic properties. They found that the substitution of Fe and Co at the Mn sites led to a drastic increase in the magnetic and ferroelectric transition temperatures. The YMn$_{1.8}$Fe$_{0.2}$O$_{5-\delta}$ and YMn$_{1.8}$Co$_{0.2}$O$_{5-\delta}$ compounds exhibited spontaneous polarization and ferromagnetic ordering at room temperature, which obviously could pave the way to their practical applications.

5.5 Two-phase multiferroics

As mentioned in the Introduction, the realizable magnetoelectric coefficient in single-phase multiferroics is very small (see Table 7) and not sufficient for practical applications. The weaknesses of the single-phase materials have their genesis in the limitation set by Equation 4. Moreover, magnetoelectric effect in most of the single-phase
multiferroics is observed only at low temperatures, because either ferromagnetic (or antiferromagnetic) or ferroelectric transition temperature is very low. An alternative approach to realization of the magnetoelectric effect is the fabrication of multiferroic composites, which makes use of indirect coupling via mechanical strain between two different materials, namely ferroelectric and ferromagnetic. Generally, the composites may consist of particles of one phase embedded into another phase matrix (Figure 47a), alternating layers of two phases (Figure 47b), and rodes of one phase surrounded by another phase matrix (Figure 47c). With the possibility of independent optimization of the two different phases for room temperature operation, the limiting condition described in Equation 4 is lifted. As a result, the magnetoelectric effect in the composites may be more than several orders of magnitude higher than that in single-phase materials. Depending on the composition and preparation conditions, magnetoelectric coefficients of the composites vary from about 10 to 100 mV/cm Oe at low-frequencies, reaching up to V/cm Oe orders of magnitude at resonance (see Ref. 34 and references therein). As an illustration, Table 7 lists the magnetoelectric coupling coefficients measured for various multiferroic single-phase materials as well as the values for some two-phase systems. A detailed discussion of composite materials is beyond the scope of this review. However, recent activities in the field of magnetoelectric composites are reviewed in detail in Ref. 34.

Table 7. Magnetoelectric coupling coefficients measured for various multiferroic single phase materials. Some two-phase systems are also included for comparison.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Material</th>
<th>magnetoelectric coefficient</th>
<th>Ref.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>$\alpha_M = \mu, \delta M/\delta E$ (ps/m)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>$\alpha_E = \delta E/\delta H$ (mV/cm Oe)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Compound</td>
<td>T (at T1)</td>
<td>References</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-------------------</td>
<td>-----------------</td>
<td>------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cr₂O₃</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>1000</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TbMn₂O₅</td>
<td>21 (at 28 K)</td>
<td>805</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LiCoPO₄</td>
<td>30.6 (at 4.2 K)</td>
<td>808</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LiNiPO₄</td>
<td>1.7 (at 20 K)</td>
<td>791</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>YIG</td>
<td>30 (at very low T)</td>
<td>809</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TbPO₄</td>
<td>36.7 (at 1.9 K)</td>
<td>810</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BiFeO₃</td>
<td>0.3 (at 20 K)</td>
<td>803,804</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>La₀.₇Sr₀.₃MnO₃/PMN-PT (001) bilayer</td>
<td>60000 (at 300 K)</td>
<td>999</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>La₀.₇Sr₀.₃MnO₃/PZT laminated composite</td>
<td>32 (at 300 K)</td>
<td>1000</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NiFe₂O₄/PZT laminated composite</td>
<td>1500 (at 300 K)</td>
<td>1001</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LSMO/PZT laminated composite</td>
<td>60</td>
<td>1002</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>0.3NiFe₂O₄/0.7PZT ceramic composites</td>
<td>20-30</td>
<td>1003</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BaTiO₃/CoFe₂O₄ ceramic composite</td>
<td>up to 2540</td>
<td>1004</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
6 Metamaterials

In this Section, we will consider oxides, namely ferrites, as a constituent of the so-called metamaterials, new artificial media which have unusual electrical and magnetic properties due to their structure. Unlike naturally occurring materials, metamaterials exhibit negative values of the main parameters determining the material response to
electromagnetic waves: electrical permittivity $\varepsilon$, magnetic permeability $\mu$, and, as a result, the index of refraction $n = \pm \sqrt{\varepsilon \mu}$. Metamaterials are also called negative index (NI) or left-handed (LH) materials, since the vectors of electric field $\mathbf{E}$, magnetic field $\mathbf{H}$, and phase vector $\mathbf{k}$ form a left-handed system in this case. A theoretical concept of the LH media has been developed as early as in 1967 by Veselago, who has pointed out that unusual physical phenomena arising from the sign change of the group velocity would be observed in such materials. To cite them, the phase velocity direction would be opposite to that of the energy flow, the Doppler shift would be reversed, a moving charge would emit Cherenkov radiation in the backward direction, radiation pressure would be reversed to radiation tension, converging lenses would become diverging lenses and vice versa. In 1996, Pendry et al. have demonstrated that an artificial material composed of very thin metallic wires arranged in a simple cubic lattice exhibits negative electrical permittivity. Later, the same group designed a periodic array of split ring resonators (SRRs) that exhibit negative magnetic permeability in a certain microwave frequency range. And finally in 2000, Smith et al. fabricated an NI medium in which both the effective permittivity and the effective permeability were simultaneously less than zero over a finite frequency band. In 2001, Shelby et al. demonstrated negative refraction in a Snell’s Law experiment with a prism-shaped LH-material sample. This artificial medium consisted of two sets of resonators - an array of metal posts interspersed with an array of SRRs - which were separately responsible for the negative $\varepsilon$ and $\mu$. Figure 48 shows an example of such a metamaterial. The size of the constructing elements and the spacing between them are much smaller than the radiation wavelength, and thus the composite medium can be considered pseudo-homogeneous at the wavelengths of
interest. Just as the permittivity and permeability of natural materials derive from the response of constituent atoms to applied fields, $\varepsilon$ and $\mu$ of metamaterials are determined by the response of their constituent elements.

Figure 49 shows a schematic of an NI metamaterial and its building blocks, SRRs and metallic rods. A single split-ring resonator consists of two nonmagnetic conducting concentric split rings facing in opposite directions (Figure 49a). An SRR can be considered as an $LC$ circuit consisting of inductive (rings) and capacitive (slits and the gap between the rings) elements with a resonance frequency $\omega_0 \sim \sqrt{1/LC}$. The gaps allow the SRR to be resonant at wavelengths much larger than its physical dimensions. The combination of SRRs to form a periodic structure with a strong magnetic coupling between the resonators creates a medium with an effective magnetic permeability $\mu_{\text{eff}}(\omega)$.

A time-varying magnetic field applied normal to the ring plane induces circulating currents, which in turn produce an opposing magnetic field in the loop due to Lenz’s law. At frequencies below $\omega_0$, currents in SRR can keep up with the driving force produced by the applied magnetic field and a positive response is achieved. At frequencies exceeding $\omega_0$, the response is out of phase with the driving magnetic field and negative values of the real part of the permeability are attained. The general form of the frequency dependence of the permeability of an SRR can be written as

\[ \mu_{\text{eff}} = 1 - \frac{F\omega^2}{\omega^2 - \omega_0^2 + i\omega\Gamma}, \]

where $\omega$ is the frequency of incident radiation, $F$ is the area of the unit cell occupied by the interior of the split ring, and $\Gamma$ is the dissipation factor. Figure 50 shows the frequency dependence of the real and imaginary parts of the permeability of a metamaterial.
composed of SRRs. If the resonance is strong enough and the losses depicted by $\mu_i$ are small enough, the SRR can yield a negative magnetic response.

Figure 48. A photograph of a SSR etched into copper circuit board plus copper wires to give negative $\mu$ and negative $\varepsilon$. Reprinted with permission Ref. 1010.
Figure 49 (a) Magnetically resonant ($\mu < 0$) metal structure: a single split-ring resonator (SRR) consisting of two counterfacing split rings of subwavelength dimensions. (b) Electrically resonant ($\varepsilon < 0$) metallic structure: metal rods. (c) Combination of both structures results in a negative-index metamaterial $n < 0$. Reprinted with permission Ref. 1011.
It should be mentioned that materials having negative values of electrical permittivity also occur naturally. For example, at frequencies below the plasma frequency $\omega_p$, all metals yield negative response to the electric component of electromagnetic radiation due to screening of the radiation by free electrons. As mentioned above, negative electric response is also found for periodic structures composed of a regular array of thin conducting wires or a grating on a conductor. Figure 51 shows an example of an artificial medium constructed from thin infinite wires arranged in a simple cubic lattice. Such a structure simulates the properties of low-density plasma having a dielectric response of the form\textsuperscript{1010}

$$\varepsilon(\omega) = 1 - \frac{\omega_p^2}{\omega^2}.$$

As illustrated in Figure 52, the permittivity of the material is negative for $\omega < \omega_p$. The plasma frequency is a function of carrier density $n$ and effective electron mass $m^*$ through:
\[
\omega_p^2 = 4\pi \frac{ne^2}{m},
\]
where \(e\) is the charge of an electron. For metals, \(\omega_p\) is typically in the ultraviolet region.\(^{1010}\) As compared to naturally occurring materials, the artificial negative electric response media have an advantage in that their plasma frequency can be easily tuned by varying the size and geometry of the building blocks. Indeed, the effective electron density in the wire structure shown in Figure 51 is considerably reduced relative to solid metal and can be tuned by varying the wire size and wire-to-wire spacing, thus allowing a change of the operation frequency.\(^{1010}\) Moreover, inductance of the wires contributes to the electron effective mass. For structures with a typical wire radius of a few micrometers and wire-to-wire spacing of a few millimeters, the effective electron mass is of the same order as that of a nitrogen atom. As a result, the value of \(\omega_p\) is lowered to the GHz frequency range.\(^{1006,1010}\) Thus, the plasma frequency (and the region of negative electric response) of metamaterials can be modified by changing the geometry of the artificial materials.

Due to the unique physical properties of metamaterials, new kinds of devices could be imagined, including super lenses providing resolution exceeding the diffraction limit,\(^{41,42,43}\) miniaturized antennas\(^{35,36,37,38}\) beam steerers, modulators, band-pass filters, as well as coatings making an object ‘invisible’ to electromagnetic radiation.\(^{44,45,1012}\) More detailed information on the NI metamaterials can be found in recent reviews.\(^{1010,1013,1014,1015,1016,1017}\)
Figure 51 A metamaterial with $\varepsilon<0$: a periodic structure composed of thin infinite wires arranged in a simple cubic. Reprinted with permission Ref. 1010.

Figure 52 The schematic of permittivity, $\varepsilon$, of a plasma. Below the plasma frequency, $\omega_p$, $\varepsilon$ is negative. Reprinted with permission Ref. 1010.

The “classical” NI metamaterials consisting of SRR and conducting wire arrays have, however, some disadvantages. First of all, these structures work in a fixed and rather narrow frequency band determined by the size and periodicity of their constituent blocks and thus are not tunable once built. In addition, it is difficult to manufacture such metamaterials operating in the IR and optical frequency range, because the dimensions of the constituent elements should be smaller than the wavelength. One more issue is that commonly used metals, such as copper, gold, silver, and aluminum, which are highly conductive at RF and microwave frequencies, do not exhibit conductivity at optical
frequencies, but instead exhibit plasmonic resonance (coupling of electromagnetic wave with collective oscillation of conduction electrons at metal surfaces). Besides, some natural materials (e.g. ferrites\textsuperscript{11,1018}) are known to exhibit negative $\mu$ in the microwave range, so the SRR array can be replaced with a natural material.

For these reasons, other types of NI composite materials, which are tunable by applying electric or magnetic field, composed partially of natural materials, and easier to manufacture on an industrial scale, have been investigated both theoretically\textsuperscript{1019,1020,1021,1022,1023,1024,1025,1026} and experimentally.\textsuperscript{1027,1028,1029,1030} Examples of such metamaterials are metallic magnetic nanoparticles embedded into an insulating matrix,\textsuperscript{1020,1031} superlattices consisting of natural materials,\textsuperscript{1021, 1023,1027} and combination of ferrite and metallic wires.\textsuperscript{1022,1028,1029,1030} It is interesting to note that, although it is generally believed that NI materials do not naturally occur, the negative refraction index has been obtained recently in the colossal magnetoresistance oxide $\text{La}_2/3\text{Ca}_{1/3}\text{MnO}_3$ in the gigahertz frequency range.\textsuperscript{1032} Moreover, Pimenov et al.\textsuperscript{1032} claim that conditions for negative refraction can be expected in any ferromagnetic metal such as iron, provided the existence of narrow ferromagnetic resonance.

The efforts to construct NI media from natural materials have drawn attention to ferrites due to their capability to provide negative permeability.\textsuperscript{47,1018,1019,1021,1022,1028,1029,1030,1033} Ferrites are insulating ferrimagnetic oxides possessing high permeability and moderate permittivity and low microwave losses. Since ferrites are dielectrics, electromagnetic waves are able to penetrate the materials, thereby permitting an interaction between the electromagnetic radiation and magnetization within the ferrite material. This interaction makes possible a plethora of applications in passive
microwave components such as isolators, circulators, phase shifters, tunable filters, and miniature antennas.\textsuperscript{11,1018,1034}

Ferrites crystallize in spinel, garnet, and magnetoplumbite-type structures. In all ferrite structures, metallic cations are located on the interstices of a close-packed lattice of oxygen anions. The ferrites with the cubic spinel structure have the general formula $\text{AB}_2\text{O}_4$, where $A$ is a divalent metallic ion, and $B$ is $\text{Fe}^{3+}$. In spinels, metallic cations can occupy two types of lattice sites: tetrahedral $A$ sites having 4 oxygen neighbors and octahedral $B$ sites having 6 oxygen neighbors. In each unit cell, there are 8 $A$ sites and 16 $B$ sites occupied by cations. The antiferromagnetic superexchange interaction between cations on the $A$ and $B$ sites aligns their spins to be antiparallel, therefore the net magnetization $M$ of the material is difference in magnetic moment between $A$ and $B$ sites: $M = M_B - M_A$.\hspace{1cm} Equation 12

The partial cancellation of magnetic moments is the reason of lower magnetization of ferrites as compared to that of metallic ferromagnets with parallel alignment of spins. As obvious from Equation 12, the magnetization of spinel ferrites can be increased by decreasing $M_A$. This approach is realized via doping with non-magnetic cations which exhibit a strong preference for occupation of the $A$ sites, e.g. $\text{Zn}^{2+}$. To reiterate, partial substitution of magnetic ions on the $A$ sites by non-magnetic ions leads to decrease in $M_A$ and, consequently, increase in net magnetization. It should be, however, remembered that the spontaneous alignment of moments on $B$ sites arises from their coupling to moments on the $A$ sites. Therefore, as the concentration of magnetic ions on the $A$ sites further decreases, the aligning forces on the $B$-site moments also decrease, resulting in a decrease in $M_B$ and the net magnetization.
Garnet ferrites have orthorhombic crystal structure with the general formula \( \text{Me}_3\text{Fe}_5\text{O}_{12} \), where \( \text{Me} \) is a trivalent rare-earth ion. In this structure, \( \text{Me} \) cations occupy dodecahedral sites (8 oxygen neighbors), while \( \text{Fe} \) cations reside on the tetrahedral and octahedral sites.\(^{1035}\) The most important member of this group is yttrium iron garnet \( \text{Y}_3\text{Fe}_5\text{O}_{12} \) (YIG) owing to its narrow ferromagnetic resonance (FMR) linewidth (0.6 Oe\(^{1036}\)) and very low microwave loss.

Magnetoplumbite-type ferrites have a very complex hexagonal structure (and therefore are referred to as hexaferrites). These materials exhibit large magnetic uniaxial anisotropy, with the crystallographic \( c \)-axis being the magnetic easy axis. There are a number of hexaferrites, such as M, U, X, Y, Z, and W-type hexaferrites. The best known member of this group is M-type barium hexaferrite \( \text{BaFe}_{12}\text{O}_{19} \).\(^{1037}\) The large anisotropy field of \( \sim 17000 \) Oe makes this material attractive for self-biased microwave circulators.\(^{1038}\) A detailed consideration of structures, physical properties, and applications of ferrites can be found in review by Özgür et al.\(^{11}\)

Let us now turn our attention back to the NI metamaterials. Dewar\(^{47}\) proposed an NI material consisting of an array of small metallic strips embedded into a non-conducting ferro- or ferrimagnetic matrix (for example, YIG). In this metamaterial, the array of strips provides \( \varepsilon < 0 \), and the host medium gives rise to \( \mu < 0 \). The frequency range where \( \mu \) is negative can be tuned via a static magnetic field applied parallel to the plane of the structure. This structure has a negative index of refraction for electromagnetic waves polarized so that electric field is parallel to the plane of the structure and magnetic field is normal to this plane and to the tuning magnetic field. Another variant of such a metamaterial proposed by Dewar\(^{47}\) is a square array of parallel wires embedded into the
ferromagnetic host medium. Wu\textsuperscript{1021} theoretically analyzed a periodic metal–ferrite–metal film composite (as shown in Figure 53). He demonstrated that at some microwave frequencies this composite may have negative $\varepsilon$ and negative $\mu$ simultaneously, i.e., have a negative effective refraction index. Based on a theoretical analysis using the transfer function matrix technique, He \textit{et al.}\textsuperscript{1022} have demonstrated that a metamaterial composite consisting of Cu wires and yttrium iron garnet (YIG) slabs exhibits negative index of refraction and provides a means to fabricate a low-loss, tunable NI metamaterials.

![Figure 53 Schematic diagram for the periodic metal–ferrite–metal layered composite. The incident radiation is a linearly polarized plane wave normally incident on the surface of the composite. Reprinted with permission Ref. 1021.](image)

Hea \textit{et al.}\textsuperscript{1030} have constructed a NI metamaterial from yttrium iron garnet (YIG) films and an array of copper wires. Figure 54 shows a schematic sketch of this NI metamaterial inserted into a K-band waveguide. The composite consists of eight Cu wires 25 mm in thickness and 100 mm in width, spaced 1 mm apart and a 400-µm-thick multilayered YIG film deposited by liquid phase epitaxy on both sides of a gadolinium gallium garnet (GGG) substrate. An air gap is maintained between the periodic array of the wires and the YIG slab in order to reduce the coupling between them. Figure 55
displays a frequency dependence of the refraction index calculated from experimental data. The major downward peak of real part of $n$ centered at 23GHz represents the negative refraction index region. To demonstrate the tunability of the ferrite/wire metamaterial, Hea et al. measured the transmission coefficient $S_{21}$ under different external magnetic fields applied along the $x$-axis. Figure 56 shows the shift of the region of negative index with applied field. As the field increased from 5.8 to 7.0 kOe, the $S_{21}$ peak shifted from 18 to 23 GHz. Thus, the NI metamaterial was demonstrated to be magnetic field tunable in the frequency range from 18 to 23GHz with a figure of merit of 4.2 GHz/kOe.

In addition, a left-handed metamaterial composed of SRRs and slabs of ferroelectric oxide ceramics ($0.8\text{Pb(Ni}_{1/3}\text{Nb}_{2/3})\text{O}_{3}-0.2\text{PbTiO}_{3}$) was experimentally realized by Bai et al. In this metamaterial, negative permeability was provided by an array of SRR, while the negative permittivity originated directly from intrinsic dielectric resonance in the ferroelectric material. Experimental results obtained by Bai et al. indicate left-handed behavior of the SRR/ferroelectric metamaterial in the microwave frequency range.

Bichurin et al. proposed an NI metamaterial based on bi- and multilayered ferrite-ferroelectric composites with strong magnetoelectric interactions. A schematic of the proposed structure is presented in Figure 57a. The structure consists of ferrite-ferroelectric composite disks arranged in a three-dimensional lattice. A constant magnetic field applied for tuning the resonance frequency is directed normal to the disk plane. As shown in Figure 57b, metal electrodes are deposited on both surfaces of the disks, with the electrode thickness far smaller than the skin depth. The calculations performed by Bichurin et al. have found that the permeability and permittivity of this metamaterial
take negative values in a certain frequency range determined by physical properties of the composite and electrode materials, disk dimensions, array parameters, as well as by applied electric and magnetic fields. Due to the strong magnetoelectric interaction in the ferrite-ferroelectric composites, the composite-based NI metamaterials would have a unique possibility for tuning by means of both electric and magnetic fields, which paves the way for design of new devices.

In conclusion, it was proved that SRR arrays responsible for negative permeability of NI metamaterials can be replaced with natural materials, such as ferrites, while negative permittivity can be provided by metallic wire arrays. Such ferrit-metallic wire metamaterial composites are tunable by applying of electrical or magnetic field and are much more conducive for fabrication on industrial scale. Now, the magnetic and electric responses of the man-made metamaterials can be controlled over a broad frequency range, from RF to IR, and even zero frequency.
Figure 54 Schematic diagram of the experimental setup showing the NIM composite inserted in a K-band waveguide (inside dimensions: 1.07 cm by 0.43 cm). The composite structure consisted of eight copper wires spaced 1 mm apart and multilayered YIG films with a total thickness of 400 µm. The shaded regions are YIG layers whereas the black lines represent copper wires. Note that each ferrite material is separated from the wires by a nonmagnetic dielectric material. Reprinted with permission Ref. 1030.

Figure 55 Real (solid line) and imaginary (dashed line) parts of the index of refraction deduced from experimental data for the structure shown in Figure 54. The salient downward feature of real part of $n$ centered at 23GHz represents the negative refraction index region. Reprinted with permission Ref.1030.
Figure 56 Demonstration of electronic tunability of a ferrite/wire metamaterial using external field. The large arrow at the bottom denotes the direction of frequency shift with increasing magnetic field. Reprinted with permission Ref. 1030.

Figure 57 (a) Array of composite disks with negative permeability and permittivity. (b) Element of array: r and d_c are radius and thickness of composite disks, d_m is thickness of the metal disk electrode (d_m<<d_c). After Ref. 1040.
7 Concluding remarks

A comprehensive and critical review of technologically important oxide materials, with an emphasis on high-κ dielectric, ferroelectric, ferromagnetic, and multiferroic oxides, as well as oxides found use in the new developing field of metamaterials, has been given. There has been a resurgence of interest in oxides in general and complex oxides in particular owing to their piezoelectric, ferroelectric, ferromagnetic, ferrimagnetic, and multiferroics (particularly, magnetoelectric coupling in one material) properties. Although these properties had been recognized many decades ago, the interest in oxide materials has been renewed due to the natural tendency toward device miniaturization and increasing perceived need in multifunctional materials, as well as considerable improvement of deposition techniques, which would potentially allow not only higher quality material but also thin films and heterstructures with new functionalities, e.g. multiferroic composite structures with magnetoelectric coupling.

As clearly delineated by the Si industry roadmap, scaling is imperative for increasing speed of Si-based integrated circuits. With down scaling of the channel length and associated gate dielectric thickness reduction, the gate current leakage becomes increasingly intolerable, which has awakened interest in high-κ dielectric oxides. A large variety of high-κ oxides has been proposed for replacing SiO₂ as a gate dielectric, among them HfO₂ and HfO₂-based materials have been found to be the most promising candidates combining compatibility with Si technology, high dielectric permittivity and thermal stability with low leakage current due to a reasonably high barrier height that
limits electron tunneling. Alternative candidates for high-κ dielectric applications are multicomponent oxides, such as LaScO₃, GdScO₃, DyScO₃, and LaLuO₃, which exhibit figures of merit similar to or exceeding that of HfO₂ and thus could be quite competitive with the Hf-based oxides in the nearfuture. A variety of deposition methods has been used for the high-κ oxide film deposition. It appears that ALD is the most widely used technique due to its precise thickness, composition control, and excellent step coverage, the last of which is very crucial for high-aspect device structures. However, the choice of a precursor for the ALD growth is one of the most crucial issues as impurities and defects are introduced by the precursors. In the context of compatibility of high-κ dielectrics with the Si MOSFET technology, some problems need to be solved, among them incompatibility with annealing temperatures used for activating poly-Si gates, the relatively poor quality (as compared to SiO₂), which causes charge trapping and makes the Si MOSFET gate unstable, channel mobility degradation, and threshold voltage shift induced by high-κ materials. Nevertheless, great strides have been made in Hf-based gate oxides and carried forward to production. For example, Hf-based high-κ materials have already been implemented in commercial products such as the Intel 45 nm Penryn processors based on high-κ/dual metal gate CMOS technology. Additionally, NEC is marketing a poly-Si/Hf-based high-κ low-power technology. As always, other companies are following suite by announcing high-κ products for the near future. In the upcoming years, a plethora of techniques will be undoubtedly explored at the research level, which will be following by insertion by the industry in Si CMOS circuits making the devices smaller, faster and less expensive.
The increasing demand in non-volatile random-access memory fuels interest in ferroelectric and ferro-/ferromagnetic oxides, due to their reversible spontaneous polarization and magnetization which can be used to write information in FeRAM and MRAM. In addition, a high degree of carrier polarization in magnetic oxides, such as mixed-valence manganites and DMOs, makes them promising candidates for spintronic applications. Despite a large volume of research carried out in these fields, many problems remain to be resolved. To improve characteristics of FeRAM devices, the reliability problems such as fatigue, retention, and imprint should be further addressed. As for magnetic oxides, much remains to be done both experimentally and theoretically to clarify the origin of magnetic order in DMOs. Numerous experimental data do not agree well with different theoretical approaches. Presumably, there is no single model capable of explaining the properties of a wide class of DMOs. Some data point to the existence of different types of ferromagnetic ordering in the same material depending on free carrier concentration. An important issue that must be resolved theoretically and confirmed experimentally is the existence of carrier-mediated ferromagnetic exchange in DMOs, which is the most desirable exchange mechanism for devices exploiting spin polarized carriers. One more important issue is the need for conclusive demonstration of injection of spin-polarized carriers into a semiconductor active region, which is an imperative step towards spintronic device applications.

Magnetoelectric multiferroics, the materials combining ferroelectric and magnetic properties in a single phase, were demonstrated to be promising candidates for multifunctional and spintronic devices. The candidates however are very few in number. In addition, magnetoelectric coupling in these materials is too weak and/or takes place at
temperatures to low to be practically useful. Much work is warranted on the search for single-phase materials suitable for real device applications. There is also room for theoretical studies aimed at better understanding of the underlying physics of multiferroic phenomena. From the standpoint of device applications, two-phase multiferroic composites making use of indirect coupling via mechanical strain between the ferroelectric and magnetic phases are much more appealing, at least at the present time. The possibility of independent selection of ferroelectric and magnetic components with required characteristics results in magnetoelectric coefficients several orders of magnitude higher than those in single-phase multiferroics. Among various types of multiferroic composites, epitaxial thin-film heterostructures and self-assembled nanostructures look very attractive due to the perfect contact between the two phases at epitaxial interfaces and resulting efficient strain transfer. Besides, epitaxial composites are well suitable for integration in microelectronic devices.

In the field of negative-index metamaterials, the use of ferrite oxides providing negative permeability has been proposed as an alternative to split ring resonators. Ferrite-based NI media allow designing tunable, low-loss NI structures and expanding the operating frequency band to IR and visible range. In addition, they are much simpler to fabricate and can be translated to production scale. All these make the ferrite-based metamaterials desirable candidates for future device applications such as tunable lenses, filters, phase shifters, waveguides, and broadband cloaks.
ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

This work is funded by a grant from the Office of Naval Research under the Program Director, then and now Dr. Ingham Mack and Dr. Dan Green, respectfully. Fruitful discussions with cite our group, Drs. Cite the NRL group, Profs. L. Brillson and J. Volakis of Ohio State and C. Patton of Colorado State are gratefully acknowledged.
References

39 N. Engheta, Science 317, 1698 (2007).
40 M.G. Silveirinha and N. Engheta, Phys. Rev. B 76, 245109 (2007).
59. Chiu FC, Chen SY, Chen CH, Chen HW, Huang HS, Hwang HL, Interfacial and


Dong GF, Qiu Y, Pentacene Thin-Film Transistors with Ta$_2$O$_5$ as the Gate Dielectric, JOURNAL OF THE KOREAN PHYSICAL SOCIETY 54, Part 2 Sp. Iss. SI, 493-497 (2009).


M. Houssa, V. V. Afanas’ev, and A. Stesmans, Variation in the fixed charge density of SiO$_x$ OZrO$_2$ gate dielectric stacks during postdeposition oxidation Appl. Phys. Lett. 77, 1885-1887 (2000).


93 Chang Liu, Eng Fong Chor, Leng Seow Tan, and Yufeng Dong, Band offset measurements of the pulsed-laser-deposition-grown Sc$_2$O$_3$ (111)/GaN (0001) heterostructure by X-ray photoelectron Spectroscopy, phys. stat. sol. (c) 4, No. 7, 2330–2333 (2007).
95 Chung-Yuan Chang, Trevor Pi-chun Juan, and Joseph Ya-min Lee, Fabrication and characterization of metal-ferroelectric (PbZr$_{0.53}$Ti$_{0.47}$O$_3$)-insulator (Dy$_2$O$_3$)-semiconductor capacitors for nonvolatile memory applications, Appl. Phys. Lett. 88, 072917 (2006).
120 T. Tsutsumi, Jpn. J. Appl. Phys. 9, 735 (1970)


141 J.W. Reiner, A. Posadas, M. Wang, T.P. Ma and C.H.Ahn, Growth and structural properties of crystalline LaAlO₃ on Si (0 0 1), Microelectronic Engineering Volume 85, Issue 1, January 2008, Pages 36-38


Myoung-Seok Kim, Young-Don Ko, Minseong Yun, Jang-Hyuk Hong, Min-Chang Jeong, Jae-Min Myoung and Ilgu Yun, Characterization and process effects of HfO2 thin films grown by metal-organic molecular beam epitaxy, Materials Science and Engineering: B, Volume 123, Issue 1, 15 November 2005, Pages 20-30

Myoung-Seok Kim, Young-Don Ko, Jang-Hyuk Hong, Min-Chang Jeong, Jae-Min Myoung and Ilgu Yun, Characteristics and processing effects of ZrO2 thin films grown by metal-organic molecular beam epitaxy, Applied Surface Science Volume 227, Issues 1-4, 15 April 2004, Pages 387-398


161 Akira Toriumi and Koji Kita, in chapter 7 “Material Engineering of High-k Gate Dielectrics” of "Dielectric Films for Advanced Microelectronics", ed. by Mihkail Baklanov, Karen Maex, Martin Green (Wiley, Chichester, UK, 2007), pp. 325


225 J. Im, O. Auciello, S. Streiffer, P. Baumann, D. Kaufman, and A.R. Krauss, Composition-control of magnetron-sputter-deposited (Ba_{x}Sr_{1-x})Ti_{1+y}O_{3+z} thin films for voltage tunable devices Appl. Phys. Lett. 76, 625 (2000).
234 B. Aurivillius, Mixed bismuth oxides with layer lattices. I. Structure type of CaC_{2}Bi_{2}O_{9}, Arkiv Kemi 1, 463 (1949); B. Aurivillius, Mixed bismuth oxides with layer lattices: II. Structure of Bi_{4}Ti_{3}O_{12}, Arkiv Kemi 1, 499 (1949).
240 Y. Shimakawa, Y. Kubo, Y. Nakagawa, T. Kamiyama, H. Asano, and F. Izumi, Appl.


255 Lazarevic Z, Stojanovic BD, Varela JA, An approach to analyzing synthesis, structure and properties of bismuth titanate ceramics, SCIENCE OF SINTERING Volume: 37 Issue: 3 Pages: 199-216 2005

256 Manoj Kumar, Ashish Garg, Ravi Kumar, M.C. Bhatnagar, Structural, dielectric and ferroelectric study of Ba_{0.9}Sr_{0.1}Zr_{x}Ti_{1-x}O_{3} ceramics prepared by the sol–gel method, Physica B 403 (2008) 1819–1823.

257 Zhiqiang Wei, Huping Xu, Minoru Noda and Masanori Okuyama, Preparation of Ba_{x}Sr_{1-x}TiO_{3} thin films with seeding layer by a sol–gel method, Journal of Crystal Growth Volumes 237-239, Part 1, April 2002, Pages 443-447


259 Tsai SD, Suresh MB, Chou CC, Improvement in ferroelectric properties of PZT thick films prepared by a modified sol–gel technique using low temperature laser annealing, PHYSICA SCRIPTA Volume: T129 Pages: 175-179 Published: DEC 2007

260 Pu, Zhaohui, Wu, Jiagang, Yu, Xudong, Xu, Peng, Cheng, Lifang, Xiao, Dingquan, Zhu, Hanguo, Enhanced electrical properties of Pb(Zr0.80Ti0.20)O-3 modified sol-gel technique, SURFACE & COATINGS TECHNOLOGY Volume: 202 Issue: 10 Pages: 2068-2071 Published: FEB 15 2008


262 Graca MPF, da Silva MGF, Valente MA, Structural and electrical characteristics of LiNbO_{3} embedded in a 34% SiO2 glass matrix, JOURNAL OF THE EUROPEAN CERAMIC SOCIETY Volume: 28 Issue: 6 Pages: 1197-1203 Published: 2008

263 Qi, Yajun, Lu, Chaojing, Zhang, Qiaofeng, Wang, Lihua, Chen, Fang, Cheng, Chunsheng, Liu, Baoting, Improved ferroelectric and leakage properties in sol-gel derived BiFeO_{3}/Bi_{3.15}Nd_{0.85}Ti_{3}O_{12} bi-layers deposited on Pt/Ti/SiO_{2}/Si, J. of Physics D- Applied Physics Volume: 41 Issue: 6 Article Number: 065407 Published: MAR 21 2008

264 Ye, Wanneng, Lu, Chaojing, Qi, Yajun, Liu, Xiaolin, Senz, Stephan, Lee, Sung Kyun, Hesse, Dietrich, Sol-gel derived ferroelectric Bi3.15Nd0.85Ti3O12 thin films of predominant 100/010/119 orientation deposited both on Nb-doped (011)SrTiO_{3} and on (011)SrRuO_{3}/(011)SrTiO_{3}, APPLIED PHYSICS A-MATERIALS SCIENCE & PROCESSING Volume: 91 Issue: 2 Pages: 323-326 Published: MAY 2008

265 Schneller T, Waser R, Chemical solution deposition of ferroelectric thin films - State of the art and recent trends, FERROELECTRICS Volume: 267 Pages: 293-301 Published: 2002


Weian Sun, Size effect in barium titanate powders synthesized by different hydrothermal methods, J. Appl. Phys. 100, 083503 _2006_


293 Piticescu, R. M., Mitoseriu, L., Viviani, M., and Poladian, V. M., “Preparation and characterisation of Pb(Zr_{0.52}Ti_{0.48})_{0.975}Nb_{0.025}O_3 ceramics Modelling the device”, J. Eur. Ceram. Soc., 25, 2491, 2005.


296 Naoyama, T., Sakioka, Y., Noda, M., Okuyama, M. Preparation of (Pb,Ba)TiO_3 and BaTiO_3 ferroelectric thin films at low temperatures less than 210 degree by sol-gel-hydrothermal treatment, FERROELECTRICS Volume: 335 Pages: 169-179 Published: 2006


301 Tho, Nguyen T., Inoue, Akihiro, Noda, Minoru, Okuyama, Masanori, Low temperature preparation of bismuth-related ferroelectrics powder and thin films by hydrothermal synthesis, IEEE TRANSACTIONS ON ULTRASONICS FERROELECTRICS AND FREQUENCY CONTROL Volume: 54 Issue: 12 Pages: 2603-2607 Published: DEC 2007


308 Lee, Jae Shin, Lee, Hai Joon, Lee, Jae Young, Kang, Sun Hee, Kim, Ill Won, Ahn, Chang Won, Chung, Gwiy Sang, Preparation and evaluation of lead-free Na0.5K0.5NbO3 ferroelectric thin films, JOURNAL OF THE KOREAN PHYSICAL SOCIETY Volume: 52 Issue: 4 Pages: 1109-1113 Published: APR 2008 RF

309 Ki Woong Kim,1 Tai Suk Kim,1 Min Ku Jeon,1 Kwang Seok Oh,1 Chang Hwa Jung,1 and Seong Ihl Woo, Ferroelectric properties of Bi4−xCe4Ti3O12 ,0<4 thin film array fabricated from Bi2O3 /CeO2 /TiO2 multilayers using multitarget sputtering, Appl. Phys. Lett. 92, 052911 (2008)

310 Suchaneck, Gunnar, Vidyarthi, Vinay S., Reibold, Marianne, Deynaka, Alexander, Jastrabik, Lubomir, Gerlach, Gerald, Hartung, Johannes, Large area deposition of Pb(Zr,Ti)O-3 thin films for piezoelectric MEMS devices, JOURNAL OF
313 Yibin Li a, Sam Zhang a, Weidong Fei b, Thirumany Sritharan c, Cong Xu, Nd-substituted SrBi2Ta2O9 ferroelectric thin films prepared by radio frequency magnetron sputtering, Thin Solid Films 515 (2007) 8371–8375
314 Li, Y. B., Zhang, S., Fei, W. D., Gan, Z. H., Mhaisalkar, S., Formation and stability of pyrochlore in sputtered SBT thin films, ADVANCES IN APPLIED CERAMICS Volume: 106 Issue: 4 Pages: 180-185 Published: AUG 2007
317 Chen, Hongwei, Yang, Chuanren, Fu, Chunlin, Zhang, Jihua, Feng, Shucheng, Pei, Yafang, RF magnetron sputtering condition dependences of dielectric non-linearity of Ba0.6Sr0.4TiO3 thin films, INTEGRATED FERROELECTRICS Volume: 91 Pages: 103-111 Published: 2007


I. Aulika, J. Pokorny, V. Zauls, K. Kundzins, M. Rutkis, J. Petzel, Structural and optical characterization of Ba\(_{0.8}\)Sr\(_{0.2}\)TiO\(_3\) PLD deposited films, Optical Materials 30 (2008) 1017–1022.

Peng W (Peng, Wei), Bouquet V (Bouquet, Valerie), Deputier S (Deputier, Stephanie), Simon Q (Simon, Quentin), Guiloux-Viry M (Guiloux-Viry, Maryline), Perrin A (Perrin, Andre), Effect of thin KNbO3 seed layers on pulsed laser deposited ferroelectric KTa\(_{0.65}\)Nb\(_{0.35}\)O\(_3\) films for microwave tunable application, INTEGRATED FERROELECTRICS Volume: 93 Pages: 126-132 Published: 2007.


H.N. Lee, D. Hesse, Anisotropic ferroelectric properties of epitaxially twinned Bi\(_{3.25}\)La\(_{0.75}\)Ti\(_3\)O\(_12\) thin films grown with three different orientations, Appl. Phys. Lett. 80 (2002) 1040.


213


Michael Mehring, From molecules to bismuth oxide-based materials: Potential homo- and heterometallic precursors and model compounds, Coordination Chemistry Reviews 251 (2007) 974–1006


Furukawa T (Furukawa, T.), Oshima N (Oshima, N.), Suzuki M (Suzuki, M.), Okaura S (Okaura, S.), Funakubo H (Funakubo, H.), Properties of a novel bismuth percursor for MOCVD, INTEGRATED FERROELECTRICS Volume: 84 Pages: 197-202 Published: 2006


373 C. M. Foster, G.-R. Bai, R. Csencsits, J. Vetrone, R. Jammy, L. A. Wills, E. Carr, and J. Amano, Single-crystal Pb(Zr,Ti)1-xO3 thin films prepared by metal-organic chemical


Bo Xiao, Vitaliy Avrutin, Hongrui Liu, Emmanuel Rowe, Jacob Leach, Xing Gu, Ümit Özgür, and Hadis Morkoç, Effect of large strain on dielectric and ferroelectric properties of Ba0.5Sr0.5TiO3 thin films, accepted for publication in Appl. Phys. Lett. (2009).

W. Chang, L. M. B. Alldredge, S. W. Kirchoefer, and J. M. Pond, Microwave dielectric properties of strained Ba0.5Sr0.5TiO3 films with and without strain-induced permanent polarization at room temperature J. Appl. Phys. 102, 014105 (2007)


R. Dat, D. J. Lichtenwalner, O. Auciello, and A. I.Kingon, Polycrystalline La0.5Sr0.5CoO3/PbZr0.53Ti0.47O3/ La0.5Sr0.5CoO3 ferroelectric capacitors on platinized silicon with no polarization fatigue, Appl. Phys. Lett. 64, 2673 (1994).


Scott, J. F., “New developments on FRAMs: [3D] structures and all-perovskite FETs”, Materials Science and Engineering B, 120, 6, 2005


Y. C. Yang,1 C. F. Zhong,2 X. H. Wang,2 B. He,3 S. Q. Wei,3 F. Zeng,1 and F. Pan, Room temperature multiferroic behavior of Cr-doped ZnO films, J. Appl. Phys. 104, 064102 (2008).


N. Theodoropoulou, V. Misra, J. Philip, P. LeClair, G.P. Berera, J.S. Moodera, B.


447 Radovanovic PV, Gamelin DR. High temperature ferromagnetism in \( \text{Ni}^{2+} \)-doped \( \text{ZnO} \) aggregates prepared from colloidal diluted magnetic semiconductor quantum dots. Phys Rev Lett 2003; 91:157202.


449 X XWei1, C Song1, K W Geng1, F Zeng1, B He2 and F Pan, Local Fe structure and ferromagnetism in Fe-doped \( \text{ZnO} \) films, J. Phys.: Condens. Matter 18 (2006) 7471–7479


463 H W. Ho, B C Zhao, B Xia, S L Huang, Y Wu, J G Tao, A C H Huan and L Wang, Magnetic and magnetotransport properties in Cu and Fe co-doped bulk In2O3 and ITO, J. Phys.: Condens. Matter 20 (2008) 475204


475 N. H. Hong, J. Sakai, N. Poirot, and V. Briz‘e, Room-temperature ferromagnetism observed in undoped semiconducting and insulating oxide thin films, 2006 Phys. Rev. B 73 132404


496 C. Zener; “Interaction Between the d Shells in the Transition Metals”; Phys. Rev.; 81,


F. Ma, J. Kudrnovsky, V. Drchala and G. Bouzerar, Magnetism without magnetic impurities in oxides ZrO₂ and TiO₂, Philosophical Magazine, Vol. 88, Nos. 18–20, 2008, 2755–2764


S. A. Koster, V. Moshnyaga, K. Samwer, O. I. Lebedev, G. Van Tendeloo, O. Shapoval, and A. Belenchuk, Doping of interfaces in (La0.7Sr0.3MnO3)1−x/(MgO)x composite film, Appl. Phys. Lett. 81, 1648-1650 (2002).


553 J. H. van Santen, and G. Jonker, 1950, Physica (Amsterdam) 16, 599

554 G. Jonker, and van Santen, 1950, Physica (Amsterdam) 16, 337

555 Jonker, G. H., 1956, Physica, 22, 707


558 Goodenough J B 1955 Phys. Rev. 100 564

559 H. A. Kramers Physica 1, 182 (1934) L’interaction Entre les Atomes Magnétogènes dans un Cristal Paramagnétique


566 Millis A J Lattice effects in magnetoresistive manganese perovskites1998 Nature 392 147


Yu Lu, X. W. Li, G. Q. Gong, Gang Xiao, A. Gupta, P. Lecoeur, J.Z. Sun, Y.Y. Wang, and V.P. Dravid, Large magnetotunneling effect at low magnetic fields in micrometer-scale epitaxial La 0.67Sr 0.33MnO3 tunnel junctions, Phys. Rev. B 54, R8357 (1996).


J. O’Donnell, A. E. Andrus, S. Oh, E. V. Colla, and J. N. Eckstein, Appl. Phys. Lett. 76,
1914 (2000).

585 Goldschmidt V M 1958 Goechemistry (Oxford: Oxford University Press);

586 Goodenough J B 1997 J. Appl. Phys. 81 5330


589 Goodenough J B and Longo M 1970 Landolt–Böhnstein Group III vol 4 126


591 Wollan E O and Koehler W C 1955 Phys. Rev. 100 545


595 D.J. Wang, C.M. Xiong, G.J. Liu, Y.W. Xie, B.G. Shen, J.R. Sun Effects of oxygen content on the transport property of La0.7Ce0.3MnO3 film, Physica B 371 (2006) 187–191

596 J. Sakai, N. Ito, and S. Imai, Oxygen content of La1−xSr0.1MnO3−y thin films and its relation to electric-magnetic properties J. Appl. Phys. 99, 08Q318 (2006)


615 R. Kajimoto,1 H. Yoshizawa,2 Y. Tomioka,3 and Y. Tokura, Stripe-type charge ordering in the metallic A-type antiferromagnet Pr$_{0.5}$Sr$_{0.5}$MnO$_3$, PHYSICAL REVIEW B 66, 180402-R (2002)


231


14. Pal S, Bose E, Chaudhuri B K, Yang H D, Neeleshwar S and Chen Y Y Effect of Ni doping in rare-earth manganite La$_{0.7}$Pb$_{0.3}$Mn$_{1-x}$Ni$_x$O$_3$ (x=0.0–0.5) 2005 J. Magn. Magn. Mater. 293 872


16. I. Kammouna, W. Cheikhrouhou-Koubaa a, W. Boujelben a, A. Cheikhrouhou Bi doping effects on the physical properties of Pr$_{0.6}$Sr$_{0.4}$Mn$_{1-x}$Bi$_x$O$_3$ (0≤x≤0.2) manganese oxides Journal of Alloys and Compounds 452 (2008) 195–199

17. Ang R, Sun Y P, Yang J, Zhu X B and Song W H Transport mechanism and magnetothermoelectric power of electron-doped manganites La$_{0.85}$Te$_{0.15}$Mn$_{1-x}$Cu$_x$O$_3$ (0 ≤ x ≤ 0.20) 2006 J. Appl. Phys. 100 073706

18. Yang J, Song W H, Ma Y Q, Zhang R L, Zhao B C, Sheng Z C, Zheng G H, Dai J M and Sun Y P Structural, magnetic, and transport properties of the Cu -doped manganite La$_{0.85}$Te$_{0.15}$Mn$_{1-x}$Cu$_x$O$_3$ (0≤x≤0.20) Phys. Rev. B 70, 092504 (2004)

19. Wenger LE, Tsoi GM, Suryanarayanan R, Sudyoadsuk T. “ Effect of Cr-doping on the magnetic and electrical properties of La$_{0.4}$Ca$_{0.6}$MnO$_3$ “” JOURNAL OF APPLIED PHYSICS Volume: 103 Issue: 7 Article Number: 07F723 : APR 1 2008

20. Sotirova E, Wang X L, Horvat J, Silver T, Konstantinov K and Liu H K Study of structure, transport, paramagnetic and ferromagnetic properties of La$_{0.8}$Sr$_{0.2}$Mn$_{1-x}$Zn$_x$O$_3$ perovskite manganite 2002 Supercond. Sci. Technol. 15 346


22. A. Nucara, P. Maselli, M. Del Bufalo, M. Cestelli Guidi, J. Garcia, P. Orgiani, L. Maritato, and P. Calvani, Effect of Ga substitution on the optical properties of La-Sr manganites, PHYSICAL REVIEW B 77, 064431 _2008_

Algarabel P A and Ritter C Structural, magnetic, and transport properties of the giant magnetoresistive perovskites La$_{2/3}$Ca$_{1/3}$Mn$_{1-x}$Al$_x$O$_3$-δ Phys. Rev. B 55, 8905 - 8910 (1997)

633 Nam, D. N. H, Dai, N. V., Hong, L. V., Phuc, N. X., Bau, L. V.), Nordblad, P., Newrock, R. S. “Effects of selective dilution on the magnetic properties of La$_{0.7}$Sr$_{0.3}$Mn$_{1-x}$M'$_x$O$_3$ (M' = Al, Ti), JOURNAL OF THE KOREAN PHYSICAL SOCIETY Volume: 52 Issue: 5 Pages: 1460-1464 Published: MAY 2008


635 Liu X, Xu X and Zhang Y Effect of Ti dopant on the carrier density collapse in colossal magnetoresistance material La$_{0.7}$Ca$_{0.3}$Mn$_{1-y}$TiyO$_3$ Phys. Rev. B 62, 15112 - 15119 (2000)


638 Sen V, Panwar N, Bhalla G L and Agarwal S K Structural, electrical and magnetic properties of Sb-doped Pr$_{2/3}$Ba$_{1/3}$MnO$_3$ perovskite manganites 2007 J. Alloys Compounds 439 205

639 Cai J W, Wang C, Shen B-G, Zhao J-G and Zhan W-S, “Colossal magnetoresistance of spin-glass perovskite La$_{0.67}$Ca$_{0.33}$Mn$_{0.9}$Fe$_{0.1}$O$_3$” Appl. Phys. Lett. 71, 1727 (1997);

640 Ahn K H, Wu X W, Liu K and Chien C L Effects of Fe doping in the colossal magnetoresistive La$_{1-x}$Ca$_x$MnO$_3$ J. Appl. Phys. 81, 5505 (1997);

641 Sridharan V, Lakshmi L S, Govindraj R, Nithya R, Natarajan D V and Radhakrishnan T S Transport and thermal properties of La$_{0.67}$Ca$_{0.33}$Mn$_{1-x}$M$_x$O$_3$ (M=Fe, Zr and Hf) 2001 J. Alloys Comp. 326 65


643 Wang L M, Lai J-H, Wu J-I, Kuo Y-K and Chang C L Effects of Ru substitution for Mn on La$_{0.7}$Sr$_{0.3}$MnO$_3$ perovskites J. Appl. Phys. 102, 023915 (2007);

644 Lorenzo Malavasi, Maria Cristina Mozzati, Cristina Tealdi, Carlo Bruno Azzoni, and Giorgio Flor, Influence of Ru Doping on the Structure, Defect Chemistry, Magnetic Interaction, and Carrier Motion of the La$_{1-x}$Na$_x$MnO$_3$+$\alpha$ Manganite J. Phys. Chem. B 2005, 109, 20707-20713
645 B. Raveau, A. Maignan, C. Martin, R. Mahendiran, and M. Hervieu, Ru-Induced Ferromagnetism and Metallicty in Mn(IV)-Rich Manganites Ln0.4Ca0.6MnO3 J. Solid State Chem. 151, 330 (2000).
646 A. Maignan, C. Martin, M. Hervieu, and B. Raveiu, Ru doping of the A-type antiferromagnet Pr0.5Sr0.5MnO3: Conversion to a metallic ferromagnet J. Appl. Phys. 89, 500 (2001)
647 H. Yamada, M. Kawasaki, and Y. Tokura, Ru-doped La0.6Sr0.4MnO3 thin films as a coercivity tunable electrode for magnetic tunnel junctions Appl. Phys. Lett. 85, 192505 (2005).
650 M. Koubaa, A. M. Haghir-Goetnet, R. Desfeux, Ph. Lecoeur, W. Prellier, and B. Mercuy, Crystallinity, surface morphology, and magnetic properties of La0.7Sr0.3MnO3 thin films: An approach based on the laser ablation plume range models, J. Appl. Phys. 93, 5227 (2003).


662 C. Dubourdieu, M. Rosina, H. Roussel, F. Weiss, J. P. Sénateur, and J. L. Hodeau, Pulsed liquid-injection metalorganic chemical vapor deposition of La$_{0.7}$Sr$_{0.3}$MnO$_3$/SrTiO$_3$ superlattices Appl. Phys. Lett. 79, 1246 (2001)

663 A. Abrutis, V. Plausinaitiene, V. Kubilius, A. Teiserskis, Z. Saltyte, R. Butkute and J. P. Sénateur, Magnetoresistant La$_{1-x}$Sr$_x$MnO$_3$ films by pulsed injection metal organic chemical vapor deposition: effect of deposition conditions, substrate material and film thickness, Thin Solid Films 413, 32 (2002)


666 D.R. Sahu, D.K. Mishra, Jow-Lay Huang, and B.K. Roul, Annealing effect on the properties of La$_{0.7}$Sr$_{0.3}$MnO$_3$ thin film grown on Si substrates by DC sputtering, Physica B 396 (2007) 75–80

667 M. J. Casanove, C. Roucau, P. Baulès, J. Majimel, J.-C. Ousset, D. Magnoux and J. F. Bobo, Growth and relaxation mechanisms in La$_{0.66}$Sr$_{0.33}$MnO$_3$ manganites deposited on SrTiO$_3$(001) and MgO(001) Applied Surface Science 188, 19 (2002)

668 L. M. Wang and Chih-Chian Guo, Anisotropic magnetoresistance and spin polarization of La$_{0.7}$Sr$_{0.3}$MnO$_3$/SrTiO$_3$ superlattices Appl. Phys. Lett. 87, 172503 (2005)


670 T. Li, B. Wang, H. Dai, Y. Du, H. Yan, and Y. Liu, Annealing effect on the structural and magnetic properties of La$_{0.7}$Sr$_{0.3}$MnO$_3$ films J. Appl. Phys. 98, 123505 (2005)

671 S. Y. Yang, W. L. Kuang, Y. Liou, W. S. Tse, S. F. Lee and Y. D. Yao, Growth and characterization of La$_{0.7}$Sr$_{0.3}$MnO$_3$ films on various substrates J. Mag. and Mag. Mat., 268, 326 (2004)


682 Osami Yanagisawa, Mitsuru Izumi, Kai-Hua Huang, Wei-Zhi Hu, Yi Shen, Kenji Nakanishi, Yoshihiro Takahashi, Hideo Nojima, Comparative study of photo-induced effect on the charge-ordered state of Pr0.65Ca0.35MnO3 in powder and thin films, Journal of Magnetism and Magnetic Materials 211 (2000) 133–138


M. Strikovski and J. H. Miller, Jr., Appl. Phys. Lett. 73, 1733 ~1998!.
693 S. Matsuno, F. Uchikawa, S. Utsunomiya, and S. Nakabayashi, Metalorganic chemical vapor deposition using a single solution source for high J, Y1Ba2Cu3Q7--x superconducting films Appl. Phys. Lett. 60, 2427 (1992)
700 E. S. Vlakhov, R. A. Chakalov and R. I. Chakalova, and K. A. Nenkov, Influence of the substrate on growth and magnetoresistance of La0.7Ca0.3MnOz thin films deposited by magnetron sputteringJ. Appl. Phys. 83, 2152 (1998)
702 Yuan-Chang Lianga,z and Yung-Ching Liangb. Quantifying Strain Effects on Physical Properties of La0.68Ba0.32MnO3 Epilayers and Heterostructures, Journal of The Electrochemical Society, 154 ,12, P147-P151 (2007)
703 P K Muduli, S K Bose and R C Budhani Stress-induced competing ferromagnetic and antiferromagnetic orders in epitaxial films of A-type antiferromagnet La0.45Sr0.55MnO3 J. Phys.: Condens. Matter 19 (2007) 226204
Lett. 88 174103


Christen H M, Varela M, Kim D H, “The effect of strain and strain symmetry on the charge-order transition in Bi$_{0.4}$Ca$_{0.6}$MnO$_3$ films”, PHASE TRANSITIONS Volume: 81 Issue: 7-8 Pages: 717-727 (2008)


E.S. Vlakhova, K.A. Nenkova, T.I. Donchev, A.Y. Spasov, “Influence of misfit stress on the structure and magnetoresistive properties of magnetron sputtered La$_{0.7}$Sr$_{0.3}$MnO$_3$ thin films on LaAlO$_3$(100) substrate”, Vacuum 69 (2003) 255–259

721 H. S. Wang,a) E. Wertz, Y. F. Hu, and Qi Li, D. G. Schlom, Role of strain in magnetotransport properties of Pr0.67Sr0.33MnO3 thin films, J. Appl. Phys., Vol. 87, 7409 (2000)


727 E. S. Vlakhov, T. I. Donchev, A. Y. Spasov, K. Dörr, K. A. Nenkov, A. Handstein, S. Pignard and H. Vincent, Structural and magnetotransport properties of magnetron sputtered La0.7Sr0.3MnO3 thin films Vacuum 69, 249 (2002)


733 J. Gao and F.X. Hu, Rectifying behavior and magnetic tunability in heterojunctions composed of p-La0.9Ba0.1MnO3/n-Si, Materials Science and Engineering: B Volume 144, Issues 1-3, 25 November 2007, Pages 100-103

734 A. K. Pradhan,a_ J. B. Dadson, D. Hunter, K. Zhang, S. Mohanty, E. M. Jackson,


739 J. Aarts, S. Freisem, R. Hendrikx, and H. Zandbergen, Disorder effects in epitaxial thin films of .La,Ca,MnO₃”, Appl. Phys. Lett. 72, 2975 _1998!.


745 Dai, Nguyen Van, Thuan, Nguyen Chi, Hong, Le Van, Phuc, Nguyen Xuan, Magnetoresistance effect in La₀.7Sr₀.3MnO₃ thin films fabricated by using pulsed laser deposition, JOURNAL OF THE KOREAN PHYSICAL SOCIETY Volume: 52 Issue: 5 Pages: 1452-1455 Published: MAY 2008


749 Lisauskas A, Khartsec S I and Grishin A Tailoring the colossal magnetoresistivity: La_{0.7}(Pb_{0.63}Sr_{0.37})_{0.3}MnO_3 thin-film uncooled bolometer 2000 Appl. Phys. Lett. 77 756-758

750 Rajeswari M, Chen C, Goyal A, Kwon C, Robson M C, Ramesh R, Venkatesan T and Lakeou S Low-frequency optical response in epitaxial thin films of La_{0.67}Ca_{0.33}MnO_3 exhibiting colossal magnetoresistance 1996 Appl. Phys. Lett. 68 3555


761 Z. Sefrioui, V. Cros, A. Barthelemy, V. Pena, C. Leon, J. Santamaria, M. Varela, and S. J. Pennycook, Tunnel magnetoresistance in La_{0.7}Ca_{0.3}MnO_3/PrBa_2Cu_3O_7/La_{0.7}Ca_{0.3}MnO_3 Appl. Phys. Lett. 88, 022512 (2006)


Yafeng Lu, Magnetotransport properties of manganite based magnetic tunnel junctions J. Appl. Phys. 102, 123906 _2007


Hayakawa J, Ikeda S, Lee Y, Matsukura F and Ohno H 2006 Giant tunnel magnetoresistance and high annealing stability in CoFeB/MgO/CoFeB magnetic tunnel junctions with synthetic pinned layer, Appl. Phys. Lett. 89 232510


in La0.6Sr0.4MnO3ÖSrTiO3 superlattices Phys. Rev. B 64, 064429 ~2001!


785 S.Foner and M. Hanabusa, Magnetoelectric effect in Cr2O3 and (Cr2O3)0.8·(Al2O3)0.2, J. Appl. Phys. 34, 1246-1247 (1963).


796 T. Watanabe and K. Kohn, “Magnetoelectric effect and low temperature transition of PbFe0.5Nb0.5O3”, Phase Trans. 15, 57 (1989).


829 Alexei A. Belik, Satoshi Iikubo, Katsuaki Kodama, Naoki Igawa, Shinichi Shamoto,


838 P. Baettig and N. A. Spaldin, Ab initio prediction of a multiferroic with large polarization and magnetization, Appl. Phys. Lett. 86, 012505 _2005_.

839 P. Baettig, C. Ederer, and N. A. Spaldin, First principles study of the multiferroics BiFeO₃, Bi₂FeCrO₆, and BiCrO₃: Structure, polarization, and magnetic ordering temperature, Phys. Rev. B 72, 214105 _2005_.


842 Nicola A. Hill and Alessio Filippetti, Journal of Magnetism and Magnetic Materials,
247

242, 976 (2002)
853 SOSNOWSKA I, PETERLINNEUMAIER T, STEICHELE E, SPIRAL MAGNETIC-ORDERING IN BISMUTH FERRITE, JOURNAL OF PHYSICS C-SOLID STATE PHYSICS Volume: 15 Issue: 23 Pages: 4835-4846 Published: ~1982
856 V. R. Palkar, J. John, and R. Pinto, Observation of saturated polarization and dielectric anomaly in magnetoelectric BiFeO3 thin filmsAppl. Phys. Lett. 80, 1628 ~2002!.
857 W. M. Zhu and Z.-G. Ye, Ceram. Int. 30, 1435 _2004_.

847
Multiferroic properties of modified BiFeO3-PbTiO3-based ceramics: Random-field
induced release of latent magnetization and polarization
Phys. Rev. B 72, 104434 _2005_.

Hanjong Paik, Hosung Hwang, and Kwangsoo No, Seunghwa Kwon and David P.
Cann, Room temperature multiferroic properties of single-phase „Bi0.9La0.1…FeO3–
Ba„Fe0.5Nb0.5…O3 solid solution ceramics, Appl. Phys. Lett. 90, 042908 _2007).

B. Ruette, S. Zvyagin, A. P. Pyatakov, A. A. Bush, J. F. Li, V. I. Belotelov,
A. K. Zvezdin, and D. Viehland, Magnetic-field-induced phase transition in BiFeO3
observed by high-field electron spin resonance: Cycloidal to homogeneous spin

Vaithyanathan, D. G. Schlom, U. V. Waghmare, N. A. Spaldin, K. M. Rabe, M. Wuttig,
and R. Ramesh, Epitaxial BiFeO3 Multiferroic Thin Film Heterostructures, Science 299,
1719 (2003).

F. Bai, J. Wang, M. Wuttig, J. Li, N. Wang, A. P. Pyatakov, A. K. Zvezdin,
L. E. Cross, and D. Viehland, Destruction of spin cycloid in (111)c-oriented BiFeO3 thin
films by epitaxial constraint: enhanced polarization and release of latent magnetization.

K. Y. Yun, M. Noda, and M. Okuyama, Prominent ferroelectricity of BiFeO3 thin

K. Y. Yun, D. Ricinschi, T. Kanashima, M. Noda, and M. Okuyama, Giant
ferroelectric polarization beyond 150 μC/cm(2) in BiFeO3 thin film Jpn. J. Appl. Phys.,

Kwi Young Yun, Minoru Noda, Masanori Okuyama, Hiromasa Saeki, Hitoshi Tabata,
and Keiisuke Saito, Structural and multiferroic properties of BiFeO3 thin films at room
Temperature, J. Appl. Phys., 96, 3399 2004

Kwi Young Yun, Dan Ricinschi, Takeshi Kanashima, and Masanori Okuyama,
Enhancement of electrical properties in polycrystalline BiFeO3 thin films, Appl. Phys.
Lett. 89, 192902 _2006_.

Ricinschi D, Yun KY, Okuyama M, First-principles study of BiFeO3 films with giant
polarization and its dependence on structural parameters, FERROELECTRICS Volume:
335  Pages: 181-190  Published: ~2006

Jiefang Li, Junling Wang, M. Wuttig, R. Ramesh, Naigang Wang, B. Ruette, A. P.
Pyatakov, A. K. Zvezdin, and D. Viehland, Dramatically enhanced polarization in .001.,
.101., and .111. BiFeO3 thin
Critical Reviews in Solid State and Materials Sciences 2010


877 Chin-Feng Chung, Jen-Po Lin, and Jenn-Ming Wu, Influence of Mn and Nb dopants on electric properties of chemical-solution-deposited BiFeO3 films Appl. Phys. Lett. 88, 242909 (2006)

878 Chia-Ching Lee and Jenn-Ming Wu, Applied Surface Science 253, 7069 (2007)
880 Jong Kuk Kim, Sang Su Kim, and Won-Jeong Kim, Materials Letters 59, 4006 (2005)


884 R. Resta, Rev. Mod. Phys. 66, 899 1994d


892 Zalesskii AV, Frolov AA, Khimich TA, Bush AA, Composition-induced transition of spin-modulated structure into a uniform antiferromagnetic state in a Bi1-xLaxFeO3 system studied using Fe-57 NMR, PHYSICS OF THE SOLID STATE Volume: 45 Issue: 1 Pages: 141-145 Published: ~2003
915 Dae Ho Kim and Ho Nyung Lee, Michael D. Biegalski, and Hans M. Christen, Large ferroelectric polarization in antiferromagnetic BiFe0.5Cr0.5O3 epitaxial films, Appl. Phys. Lett. 91, 042906 _2007_.


16, 957 _1963_.

921 W. C. Koehler, H. L. Yakel, E. O. Wollan, and J. W. Cable, Phys. Lett. 9, 93 _1964!;


924 Makoto Tachibana,1 Tomotaka Shimoyama,2 Hitoshi Kawaji,2 Tooru Atake,2 and Eiji Takayama-Muromachi, Jahn-Teller distortion and magnetic transitions in perovskite RMnO$_3$ (R=Ho, Er, Tm, Yb, and Lu), Physical Review B 75, 144425 (2007)


929 J.-S. Zhou,1 J. B. Goodenough,1 J. M. Gallardo-Amores,2 E. Morán,2 M. A. Alario-Franco,2 and R. Caudillo, Hexagonal versus perovskite phase of manganite RMnO$_3$ (R=Y, Ho, Er, Tm, Yb, Lu), Physical Review B 74, 014422 _2006_.


948 Mori, S., Tokunaga, J., Horibe, Y., Asada, T., Koyama, Y., Katsufuji, T., “Doping
effect on ferroelectric microstructure in YMn$_{1-x}$Ti$_x$O$_3$.


950 M. Chandra Sekhar, Seongsu Lee, Gwangho Choi, Changhee Lee, and J.-G. Park, Doping effects of hexagonal manganites Er$_{1-x}$Y$_x$MnO$_3$ with triangular spin structure, PHYSICAL REVIEW B 72, 014402 (2005)

951 Iliev MN, Lorenz B, Litvinchuk AP, Wang YQ, Sun YY, Chu CW Structural, transport, magnetic properties and Raman spectroscopy of orthorhombic Y$_{1-x}$Ca$_x$MnO$_3$ (0 <= x <= 0.5) JOURNAL OF PHYSICS-CONDENSED MATTER Volume: 17 Issue:

21 Pages: 3333-3341 : JUN 1 2005

952 Bas B. Van Aken, Jan-Willem G. Bos, Robert A. de Groot, and Thomas T. M. Palstra, Asymmetry of electron and hole doping in YMnO$_3$ PHYSICAL REVIEW B, VOLUME 63, 125127

953 Taekjib Choi and Jaichan Lee, Bi modification for low-temperature processing of YMnO$_3$ thin films, Appl. Phys. Lett., Vol. 84, No. 24, 14 June 2004


962 N. Fujimura a; N. Shigemitsu a; T. Takahashi a; A. Ashida a; T. Yoshimura a; H. Fukumura b; H. Harima, Multiferroic behaviour of YMnO$_3$ and YbMnO$_3$ epitaxial Films, Philosophical Magazine Letters, Vol. 87, Nos. 3–4, March–April 2007, 193–201


977 G. Buisson, Phys. SINUSOID AND HELICOID MAGNETIC STRUCTURES OF RARE-EARTHS IN TMNO5 Status Solidi A 17, 191 ~1973!.


983 C. R. dela Cruz,1 B. Lorenz,1 Y. Y. Sun,1 Y. Wang,1 S. Park,2 S-W. Cheong,2 M. M. Gospodinov,3 and C. W. Chu, Pressure-induced enhancement of ferroelectricity in multiferroic RMn2O5 R=Tb,Dy,Ho”, PHYSICAL REVIEW B 76, 174106 _2007_


C. R. dela Cruz, B. Lorenz, Y. Y. Sun, C. W. Chu, S. Park, and S.-W. Cheong, Magnetoelastic effects and the magnetic phase diagram of multiferroic DyMn2O5, PHYSICAL REVIEW B 74, 180402_R__ (2006)

C.R. dela Cruz, B. Lorenz, C.W. Chu, Tuning ferroelectricity in DyMn2O5 by pressure and magnetic fields, Physica B: Condensed Matter, 403, 1331-1335 (2008)


helimagnetic YMn$_{2-x}$(Fe,Co)$_x$O$_{5-\delta}$(0.0 $\leq$ x $\leq$ 1.0) for the room temperature ferroism 2004 J. Appl. Phys. 95 7070

998 V. A. Sanina, E. I. Golovenchits, and V. G. Zalesskii, Phase Separation with Charge Self-Organization in the Tb$_{0.95}$Bi$_{0.05}$MnO$_3$, Gd$_{0.75}$Ce$_{0.25}$Mn$_2$O$_5$, and Eu$_{0.8}$Ce$_{0.2}$Mn$_2$O$_5$ Manganite Multiferroics, Physics of the Solid State, 2008, Vol. 50, No. 5, pp. 913–921.


Yongxue He, Peng He, V.G. Harris, and C.Vittoria. Role of Ferrites in Negative Index Metamaterials, IEEE TRANSACTIONS ON MAGNETICS, VOL. 42, NO. 10, 2852, 2006


M. S. Wheeler, J. S. Aitchison, and M. Mojahedi. Coated nonmagnetic spheres with a


1033 N. Koga and T. Tsutaoka, Preparation of substituted barium ferrite BaFe_{12-x}(Ti0.5Co0.5)_{x}O_{19} by citrate precursor method and compositional dependence of their magnetic properties, Journal of Magnetism and Magnetic Materials 313 (2007) 168–175


1039 Yang Bai, Hongsheng Chen, Jingjing Zhang, Yu Luo, Bo Li, Lixin Ran, Jin Au Kong, and Ji Zhou, Left-handed material based on ferroelectric Medium, Optics Express, 15, 8284-8289 (2007).

1040 M.I. Bichurin, A.S. Tatarenko, G. Srinivasan, and J.V. Mantese, Left-handed materials

1048 www.intel.com/technology/45nm/index.htm?iid=tech_as+silicon_45nm